



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

DAVIES'
HISTORICAL MANUALS

ENGLISH HISTORY

1640-1660

1/6

ATLASES, MAPS, & CLASS-BOOKS.

PUBLISHED BY

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON.

SERIES OF SCHOOL ATLASES,

EDITED BY WILLIAM HUGHES, F.R.G.S.

	s.	d.
1. PHILIPS' PREPARATORY ATLAS. Containing 16 Maps. Crown 4to., Full Coloured, in neat cover	0	6
2. PHILIPS' PREPARATORY OUTLINE ATLAS. 16 Maps. Crown 4to., in neat cover	0	6
3. PHILIPS' PREPARATORY ATLAS OF BLANK PROJECTIONS. 16 Maps. Crown 4to., in neat cover	0	6
4. PHILIPS' ELEMENTARY ATLAS FOR YOUNG LEARNERS. 16 Maps, Full Coloured. Small 4to., in neat cover	0	6
5. PHILIPS' ELEMENTARY OUTLINE ATLAS. 16 Maps. Small 4to., in neat cover	0	6
6. PHILIPS' INITIATORY ATLAS FOR YOUNG LEARNERS. 12 Maps. 16mo., plain, 3d.; coloured	0	6
7. PHILIPS' FIRST SCHOOL ATLAS. New and enlarged Edition. Containing 24 Maps, Full Coloured, bound in cloth	1	0
8. PHILIPS' SHILLING ATLAS OF MODERN GEOGRAPHY. 12 Maps. Imp. 4to., illustrated cover	1	0
9. PHILIPS' ATLAS FOR BEGINNERS. New and improved Edition, with Index. Crown 4to., cloth	2	6
10. PHILIPS' HANDY SCHOOL ATLAS. 32 Maps, with Consulting Index. Crown 8vo., cloth, lettered	2	6
11. PHILIPS' YOUNG SCHOLAR'S ATLAS. New Edition. Containing 24 Maps. Imperial 4to., bound in cloth	2	6
12. PHILIPS' YOUNG STUDENT'S ATLAS. New Edition. Containing 36 Maps. Imperial 4to., bound in cloth	3	6
13. PHILIPS' INTRODUCTORY SCHOOL ATLAS. 18 Maps, with Consulting Index. New Edition. Imperial 8vo., bound in cloth	3	6

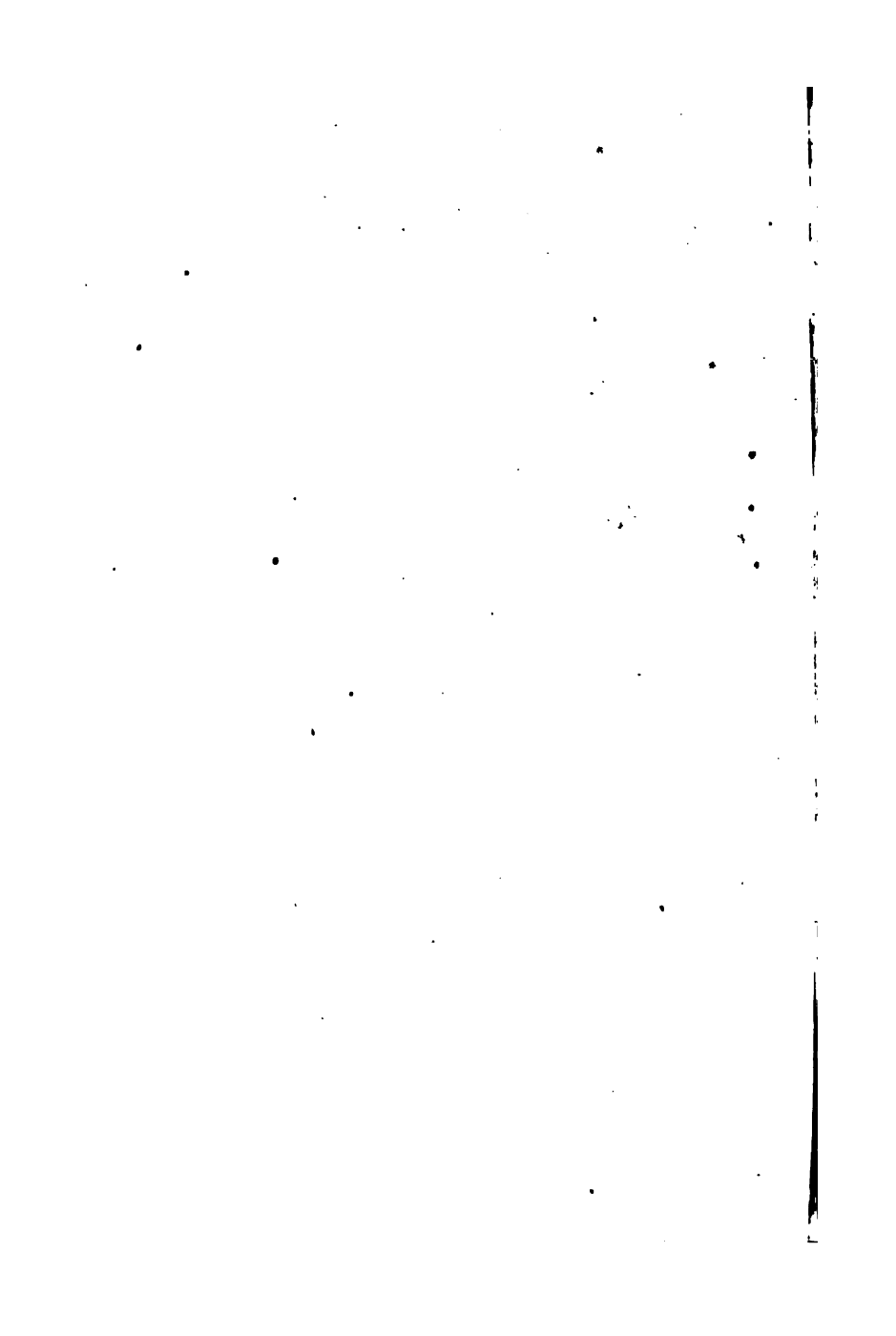
publishers, London and Liverpool.

George Philip and Son, Publishers, London and Liverpool.

SERIES OF SCHOOL ATLASES—Continued.

14. PHILIPS' SELECT SCHOOL ATLAS. 24 Maps, with Consulting Index. New and improved Edition. Imperial 8vo., bound in cloth ... 5 0
15. PHILIPS' STUDENT'S ATLAS. Containing 38 Maps, with Index. Imperial 8vo., bound in cloth ... 7 6
16. PHILIPS' COMPREHENSIVE SCHOOL ATLAS. Containing 37 Modern and 7 Ancient Maps, with Index. Imperial 8vo., strongly half-bound, cloth sides ... 10 0
17. PHILIPS' PHYSICAL ATLAS FOR BEGINNERS. 12 Maps. Crown 4to., in stiff cover ... 1 0
18. The same Book, bound in cloth, lettered ... 4 0
19. PHILIPS' SCHOOL ATLAS OF PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY. Imperial 8vo., bound in cloth ... 10 0
20. HUGHES' TRAINING SCHOOL ATLAS. A Series of 16 Physical Maps. Medium folio, cloth, lettered ... 15 0
21. PHILIPS' SCHOOL ATLAS OF SCRIPTURE GEOGRAPHY. 12 Maps. Crown 4to., stiff cover ... 1 0
22. The same Book, bound in cloth, lettered ... 1 0
23. PHILIPS' SMALLER SCRIPTURE ATLAS. 12 Maps. Illustrated cover, 6d.; cloth, lettered ... 1 0
24. PHILIPS' SCHOOL ATLAS OF CLASSICAL GEOGRAPHY. 18 Maps, with Consulting Index of Ancient and Modern Names. Medium 4to., cloth ... 5 0
25. PHILIPS' HANDY CLASSICAL ATLAS. Containing 18 Maps. Medium 8vo., bound in cloth ... 2 0
26. PHILIPS' SCHOOL ATLAS OF AUSTRALIA. Crown 4to., bound in cloth ... 2 0
27. PHILIPS' SCHOOL ATLAS OF NEW ZEALAND. Crown 4to., cloth ... 2 0
28. PHILIPS' IMPERIAL ATLAS OF OUTLINE MAPS. Two Series, each containing 12 Maps, in cover, each ... 1 0
29. PHILIPS' IMPERIAL ATLAS OF BLANK PROJECTIONS. Two Series, each containing 12 Maps, in cover, each ... 1 0
30. PHILIPS' OUTLINE ATLAS FOR BEGINNERS. Two Series, each containing 12 Maps, neat cover, each ... 1 0
31. PHILIPS' BLANK PROJECTIONS FOR BEGINNERS. Two Series, each containing 12 Maps, cover ... 1 0

George Philip and Son, Publishers, London and Liverpool.



HISTORY OF ENGLAND,

1640-1660.

BY

J. DAVIES,

UNIVERSITY OF LONDON,

*Author of "Manuals" of Genesis, St. Matthew, &c.;
the Church Catechism, and the Book of Common Prayer; and
the History and Literature of the Stuart Period,
the Tudor Period, &c.*

LONDON:

GEORGE PHILIP & SON, 32, FLEET STREET.

LIVERPOOL: CAXTON BUILDINGS, SOUTH JOHN STREET, AND
49 & 51, SOUTH CASTLE STREET.

1875.

22855. j 1



HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

1640-1660.

Stuart Line.

CHARLES I.

Dates of Birth, Accession, and Death.—(At Dunfermline), 1600; March 27, 1625-1649, January 30, (executed, at Whitehall).

Descent, &c.—Second, (but eldest surviving), son of James I., by Anne, daughter of Frederick II., of Denmark.

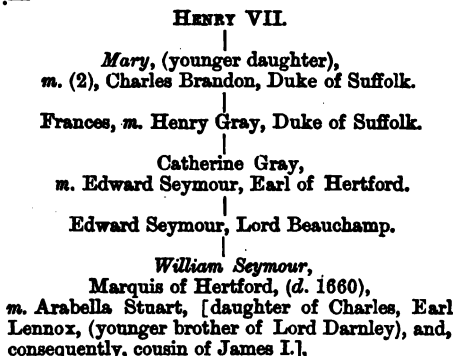
At the age of four, Charles was created Duke of York, and became heir-apparent on the death of his elder brother, Prince Henry, 1612, not, however, receiving the title of "Prince of Wales" till 1614. His education was most sedulously cared for by his father, who himself undertook the political training of his successor.

Claim to the Throne.—*Good by hereditary right*,—being the nearest living lineal descendant of Henry VII., through that monarch's elder daughter, Margaret, [*m.* (1), James IV., of Scotland; (2), Earl of Angus—by which unions, respectively, she became grandmother to Mary, Queen of Scots, and Lord Darnley, the parents of James I].

Bad legally,—since Henry VIII., Parliament having, (as it had a perfect right to do), authorized him to settle the succession by will, had devized the Crown (in case of his own children dying without offspring), to the heirs of his younger sister, Mary, Duchess of Suffolk—thus excluding the Scotch branch to which Charles belonged.

This appointment was not popular, and James I., (intended, if not actually designated, as her successor, by Elizabeth), was generally accepted, and quietly mounted the Throne, at the decease of the Virgin Queen. His possession of the sceptre until his death so strengthened his title that Charles succeeded him as a matter of course.

The legal heir, by Henry VIII.'s will, was William Seymour, the nearest living representative of the Suffolk family ; his descent from Mary is shown by the following table :—



whom it seems to have been the intention of the "Main" conspirators to raise to the throne : for marrying without the Royal permission, Seymour and his wife were imprisoned, both, however, escaping, she to be retaken, and end her days, deranged, in confinement.

Married, (1625), Henrietta Maria, (1609-69), daughter of Henry IV., of France, and Mary de Medici, being left, (by the assassination of her father, the year after her birth), to whose sole care, she imbibed those "foolish notions of the infallibility of sovereigns" which had so pernicious an influence over her, as Queen. Her religious nurture was entrusted to a Carmelite nun, whose training was successful as far "as the outer forms of" Roman "Catholicism" go : her secular education was slight, and superficial. At fifteen, she was beautiful, gay, and high-spirited.

Charles saw her first at a court-ball, at Paris, on his

HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

way, in undiscovered disguise, with Buckingham, to visit Madrid, with a view to espousing the Infanta of Spain, and conceived for her an instant passion, which led to his proposing for her, on the breaking off of the Spanish match : he was accented, and a marriage-treaty concluded, before James I.'s death, the union not taking place, however, till the June after Charles's accession.

Her levity, her attachment to the Romish Church, and her imperious spirit, which led her to influence the King towards a violent and arbitrary policy, made her extremely unpopular with the English generally, who attributed to her many of her husband's worst measures.

Just before the breaking-out of the Civil War, she, with a view, also, to escaping impeachment, went to the Continent, to seek assistance for Charles, in alliances and *matériel*, and sold, in Holland, the Crown-jewels, with whose proceeds she purchased a cargo of war-munitions, part, only, of which reached the King. She returned to England, with supplies, 1643, but, in the following year, after the birth of her youngest daughter, at Exeter, fled, finally, to France, where, at Paris, she remained, in great distress and indigence, until her husband's execution, after which, she espoused Jermyn, Earl of St. Albans.

At the Restoration, she revisited England, residing, for a time, at Somerset House.

She died at the Convent of Chaillot, from the effects of a soporific potion, administered to her, by her physicians, while she labored under an, apparently, not dangerous illness. Bossuet pronounced her funeral oration.

Her *Correspondence* with her husband, (to whom she was profoundly attached), has been published.

She was never crowned, owing to her unwillingness to compromise Charles, which, she being a Romanist, must have been the result.

Issue.— Charles II. ; Mary, m., William, Prince of Orange, (from which union sprang William III.) ; Henry, Duke of Gloucester, d. 1660 ; Elizabeth, d., (of a broken heart, in Carisbrooke Castle), 1650—wrote a pathetic account of her last interview with her father ; Henrietta Maria, d. 1670, m. Philip, Duke of Orleans : *in the descendants of Anna Maria, offspring of this marriage, by her husband, Victor Amadeus, Duke of Savoy, is to be*

found the direct heir of the Stuart Line; another daughter, d. young.

Character.—Of middle height, strong, and well-proportioned, excelling in all manly exercises, and patient of fatigue and privation; hair dark, forehead high, features handsome, expression sweetly grave—approaching the Saturnine; manners somewhat ungracious.

Of strong good sense, and fine intellect; learned, especially in Theology; highly accomplished, with a marked *penchant* for the Fine Arts, of which he was an extravagant patron.

Brave, high-spirited to obstinacy, yet most pliable when complaisantly treated; meek, and moderate, naturally, but stern, hasty, and precipitate when mounted on his political hobby; most beneficent, and capable of warm attachments; partial, and injudicious; tyrannical, owing to his unfortunate political education by his father and Buckingham, and his wife's counsels, this, and his gross and lamentable insincerity, being the sources of his ruin.

Pious, to superstition, and eminently virtuous; strictly temperate and chaste; a fond husband and father.

In fine, a generally excellent character, for the position of a private gentleman, but totally unfitted, naturally and by bringing-up, for a royal position, especially that of a Constitutional King.

WARS.

THE CIVIL WAR, (called by the Royalists "**THE GREAT REBELLION**"), 1642-1651.

Origin. — *Charles's systematic exercise of arbitrary power,—the immediate cause being his attempt to seize the five members of the Commons, and his refusal to consent to the demands which the House, in consequence of that outrage, made of him, as necessary for the assurance of liberty.*

The king's rejection, in January, of the demands of Parliament having rendered war almost inevitable, both he and his opponents commenced to take measures for entering upon the contest.

(*Here must be inserted, from "Parliamentary and Political Affairs," a sketch of these events, from the outrage upon the Five down to, and inclusive of, the taking, by Parliament, of measures for the defence of the kingdom, in March.*)

Preliminary Events. — Hostilities having now become inevitable, Charles, in April, endeavoured to capture the stores of arms in

Hull, advancing thither with only 20 attendants, trusting that the Governor, awed by the Royal presence, and reassured by the smallness of the party, would grant him entrance, and, so, enable him to take measures for seizing the town. Hotham, however, was wide-awake, and, point-blank, *refused admission.*

Parliament next proceeded, (May), to put in force its *Militia Bill*, levying the forces, (though for their own support), in the King's name.

Charles, to meet this move, summoned the county gentry to York, to form a guard for his person.

The response to this appeal was a gathering from that shire, and other parts of the country, of 600 supporters, amongst whom were 32 of the Upper, and over 60 of the Lower, House, including Falkland, and Hyde.

This act of the King's was at once declared, by both Houses, a violation of the popular trust, and of his Coronation Oath, and as subversive of the Government,—and vigorous steps were taken to constitute a Parliamentary army, the forces levying for Irish service being appropriated, and enlisting being pushed vigorously forward. In London, the popular cause met with enthusiastic support: 4,000 men volunteered in one day,—and immense quantities of plate, and other valuables, (including abundant contributions of ornaments, even thimbles and bodkins, from the female population), were poured into the Parliamentary treasury. The command-in-chief of the revolutionary army was bestowed upon the Earl of Essex, while the Earl of Warwick was entrusted with the fleet.

Meanwhile, part of a cargo of munitions, sent by the Queen from the Continent, reached Charles's hands.

The ultimatum, (for particulars, see "Parliamentary and Political Affairs"), sent, in June, to him, being, with the advice of his counsellors, indignantly rejected, by Charles, the last chance of a peaceful solution of difficulties vanished, and both sides proceeded to draw the sword.

Charles, having collected his available forces, marched South, until he arrived at Nottingham, where he erected the *Royal Standard*, Aug. 22, 1642,—a virtual declaration of hostilities: the weather being stormy, the flag was blown

down, which was regarded as a serious omen. His condition, at this juncture, was sorry in the extreme : he had only about 800 cavalry, and an infantry of 300, together with the Yorkshire train-bands ; while, for want of cattle to draw them, the greater portion of his feeble artillery had been left behind at York,—and, at Northampton, whither it had advanced, from London, to meet him, lay the Parliamentary main-body, 10,000 strong. Had the latter now marched upon them, the King's forces must have been effectually dissipated—never, it seems certain, to have reassembled, and, thus, the sad fratricidal contest that ensued have been avoided. But Essex had, as yet, received no orders from Parliament, and, so, their lines lay idle, while the foe gathered strength to maintain a terrible and sanguinary struggle. Yet it was well for England that the Royal cause was not crushed at the outset, for, by the long and dire agony of the Civil War only could be, and was, won the nation's political salvation.

The weakness of the monarch's forces led his advisers to suggest, and him to consent to, an attempt at reconciliation with the Parliament. Accordingly, the Earl of Southampton, Sir John Colepepper, and Sir William Uvedale, hastened to London, with proposals for a treaty, which the Houses refused to entertain, unless Charles should take down his standard, and withdraw his proclamations. To this he would not consent, so that these negotiations, (as well as a second similar essay), proved fruitless.

The *Parliament*, who had been encouraged by their great numerical superiority, now, to their further elation, scored their *first two successes*, in the capture of

Portsmouth, (the best fortified town in the kingdom), owing to the non-vigilance of the Governor, Goring,—and in the *compelling to retire into Wales*, by a body of the popular army, under the Earl of Bedford, a *Royalist levy*, raised in Somersetshire, under the powerful and high-charactered Earl of Hertford.

All the scattered corps of the *Parliamentary forces*, now, by orders, concentrated at Northampton, to the number of 15,000, Essex joining them, and taking the command. The King, realizing the incompetency of his small army to meet the foe, retired, for the purpose of augmenting his strength, to Derby ; and, thence, to Shrewsbury,

within a day's march of which place, at Wellington, he made a declaration, to his followers, that he would uphold the Protestant faith, the laws of the land, and the *just* liberty and privileges of Parliament. Arrived at *Shrewsbury*, he *mustered his forces*, and found them, with recent additions there and by the way, amount to 10,000 men.

His generals were the Earl of Lindsay, commander-in-chief; his nephew, Prince Rupert, (who, with his brother, Maurice, had, on the breaking out of the contest with the Parliament, come and placed their swords at their uncle's disposal), over the cavalry, generally, with Sir Arthur Aston at the head of the dragoons; Sir Jacob Astley, commanding the foot; and Sir John Heydon, the artillery.

The materials of which the two armies thus ranged against one another in civil strife were, respectively, composed, were widely dissimilar, but, while a variety of motives actuated the supporters of the King, his opponents were swayed by but one single and united purpose. The latter consisted chiefly of the people of London, the town populations, and the yeomen of the country, these classes having the greatest interest in supporting the Parliament in its opposition to monopolies, illegal taxations, and arbitrary measures generally,—and of the Liberal portion of the aristocracy: on this side, too, were, naturally, arrayed the powerful Presbyterian body, and other Nonconformists. The aim of this party was the securing and maintaining of civil and religious liberty. The Royalists embraced about three-fourths of the nobility and gentry, all influenced by a feeling of loyalty, and a dread of democracy, and the majority, moreover, attached to Constitutional liberty, and supporting Charles in the hope of his “submitting to a legal and limited government,” while a small minority had no higher feeling than ambition, and the attraction of the gay and adventurous life of the camp,—and the devotees of the Established Church, holding the high monarchical doctrines then so much in vogue amongst the clergy. At first, Romanists were excluded from the Royal service, but were, afterwards, when necessity began to pinch, eagerly received by the King.

The nicknames “*Cavaliers*,” and “*Roundheads*,” (of whose origin an account is given under “*Parliamentary and Political Affairs*,”) were, soon after the commencement of hos-

ilities, mutually bestowed upon each other by the two hostile factions, though it was not till the Cromwellian discipline had turned the Parliamentary soldiers into Puritan ascetics that the full sarcasm of the latter term was realised.

Such, then, and so many, were the two armies arrayed, at no great distance apart, against one another, ready and eager to "let slip the dogs of war."

Battles, &c., of the Civil War:—

1642:—

"First blood" was drawn in a cavalry *skirmish* at **Powick Bridge** (near Worcester), - **Sept. 23.** *Royalists victorious.*

Royalist commander.—Prince Rupert,—who had been detached from the main body to watch Essex, who was advancing on Worcester.

Parly. commander.—Earl of Essex, of whose force, however, only a body of horse was engaged, and utterly routed,—the encounter, however, though inoperative in preventing Essex entering Worcester, greatly raising the prestige of the Royalists. Rupert, after the engagement, returned to his uncle.

Essex remaining supine at Worcester, the King marched from Shrewsbury to London, hoping, thus, to bring on an action, nor was he disappointed, for the Parliamentarians followed, and encountered him, in the *battle of*

Edgehill (Warwickshire), **Oct. 23.**—*Indecisive*; but on the whole advantageous to the Royalists, since it decided numbers of trimming gentry to join the King.

R. comrs.—Charles I.; Rupert; Lindsay, (mortally wounded, and taken); Lord Wilmot; Lord Aubigny (slain).

P. comrs.—Essex; Sir Jas. Ramsay; Sir Wm. Balfour.

The King attacked, late in the day, and a fierce struggle ensued, during which egregious blunders in generalship were committed, on both sides, Rupert giving ample and injurious proof of his dashing, reckless bravery, as well as fondness for spoil, which eventually so greatly damaged his uncle's cause. After a slaughter, pretty evenly proportioned, of a total variously estimated at from 5,000 to 1,200, night ended the contest, and witnessed the two armies bivouacking on the field, where morning found them, indisposed to resume hostilities. Essex, first, withdrew to

Warwick, Charles following suit, but to his old quarters, whence, however, he speedily resumed his advance on London,—took

Banbury, a few days after, and, thence, marched to, and took possession of Oxford, the only town altogether devoted to himself. He proceeded next to, *and entered*,

Reading,—Martin, the Governor, in the Parliamentary interest, *fleeing*, in panic, with the garrison, to London.

Parliament, alarmed at the King's approach upon the slenderly protected metropolis, while their own main body lagged behind, voted an address for a treaty. Charles yielded to their proposal so far as to appoint Windsor as the place of a conference on the subject, but, nevertheless, pursued his way Londonwards.

Meanwhile, however, Essex, putting on a spurt, reached, *and entered*,

London, posting his forces so as to bar the enemy's ingress. The King came close at his heels, and, with his nephew's command, endeavoured to make a way into the City, under cover of a fog, the attempt bringing on the *battle of*

Brentford, Nov. 12,—Royalists victorious.

R. com.—Eupert.

P. „—Colonel Denzil Hollis.

Advancing by way of Brentford, the Prince encountered three regiments there stationed, which he succeeded in driving out, with a loss to them of many slain and 500 prisoners: the design of entering London was, however, frustrated by the opposition met with.

The City train-bands joined the forces of Essex, swelling them to 29,000 men,—a vastly more numerous army than that of Charles', who, after remaining for some time encamped in face of the foe, realized the hopelessness of any attempt on the capital, and, winter approaching, retired to Reading, and, thence, to Oxford, to hibernation.

During the winter, (1642-1643), negotiations, (*narrated under "Parliamentary and Political Affairs"*), went on between the King and the Parliament, but came to nothing.

1643:—

Early in the year, the Queen landed, at Burlington, with men and munitions.

In the S.W., Centre, W., and S.—

Sir Ralph Hopton, at the head of a Royalist body, reduced Cornwall to obedience, fighting the *battle of*

Braddock Down, Jan. 19.—*Royalists victorious.*

R. com.—Sir Ralph Hopton.

P. com.—Bathven, Governor of Plymouth,—and the *battle of*

Stratton, May 16.—*Royalists victorious.*

R. com.—Sir R. Hopton.

P. " —Earl of Stamford; General Chudleigh.

300 Parliamentarians were slain, and 1,700 taken.

Early in the year, occurred the unimportant *battle of*
Hopton Heath (near Stafford), **March 19.—*Royalists victorious.***

R. com.—Earl of Northampton (slain).

P. " —Sir Jno. Gell; Sir Wm. Brereton.

The main body of the popular forces opened the campaign by the *siege of*

Reading, April 17–27.—*Parliament victorious*
the town capitulating.

P. com.—**Essex.**

R. " —(1). Colonel Fielding; (2). Sir Arthur Aston.

After this exploit, Essex found his forces dwindling away, which compelled him to act on the defensive, tactics imitated by Charles, the only engagements between the main armies being a *skirmish at*

Chinnor (Oxon), June 17.—*Royalists victorious,*
driving in the enemy's outposts.

R. com.—Rupert.

P. " —**Essex.**

The next morning, an attempt of the Parliamentarians to cut off the Prince from retreating issued in a *skirmish at*

Chalgrove Field (Oxon), June 18.—*Royalists victorious.*

R. com.—Rupert.

P. " —John Hampden, mortally wounded, dying within a week, his loss being a severe blow, and sore discouragement to his party.

In the beginning of the summer, there was discovered, a **Plot**,—in London, having for its

Object.—To seize the City, admit the Royal forces, and compel Parliament to accept terms, the main

Conspirators—being Edward Waller, the poet; Tomkins, his brother-in-law; and Chaloner, a friend of his. The two latter were hanged, but Waller escaped this fate, by confession, and the most abject entreaties, being, however, fined £10,000, and imprisoned.

The interest of the War now shifted to the West, whither Charles had sent Maurice, and the Earl of Hertford, with a body of cavalry; these, having joined the Cornish force, reduced the county of

Devon, and commenced the reduction of

Somersetshire. Parliament entrusted a large command to Sir William Waller, to check these successes, and he, accordingly, hastened West, where he encountered the foe in the battle of

Lansdown, (near Bath), July 5.—*Royalists victorious*, with great loss on both sides.

R. com.—Prince Maurice.

P. „ —Sir William Waller,—and in the battle of

Roundaway Down, (near Devizes), July 13.—*Royalists decisively victorious*.

R. com.—Lord Wilmot.

P. „ —Sir William Waller, who, then, retreated on Bristol, with his *prestige* gone.

All the principal towns of the W., save Bristol and Gloucester, now surrendered to the Royalists, who, then, proceeded to the siege of

Bristol, July 24-27.—*Royalists victorious*, the suburbs being taken by storm, and the city capitulating.

R. com.,—Rupert.

P. „ —Nathanael Fiennes,—who was tried by Court-martial, for not defending the place as well and long as he might have done, but was pardoned, by Essex, on resigning all his military offices.

Charles now joined his army, and formed the siege of

Gloucester, Aug. 10—Sept. 5.—*Parliament victorious*, the city being relieved by Essex.

The unbroken successes of the Royalists, in the W., (as well as in the N.), and the factions and discontents amongst the leaders of the popular party, now threatened

the ruin of the Parliamentary cause, and loud were the cries for peace when Gloucester was invested, cries to which the Parliament lent a favorable ear. But the staunch Puritan party so earnestly opposed the project, and so strenuously urged, and aided, the Houses, that it was determined to continue the contest with unflagging energy. As the fruit of this resolve, Essex was despatched, with 14,000 well-appointed troops, to raise the siege of Gloucester, in which he succeeded, Charles, on the approach of the Generalissimo, (*vid* Bedford, and Leicester), to Prestbury Hills, firing his tents, and retiring towards London.

Essex, owing to want of cavalry, forebore attempting to engage the King, but, also, hastened Londonwards, when, reaching Newbury, he was astonished to find that Charles had, by forced marches, already arrived thither. An action was almost inevitable, and the armies, accordingly, engaged, in the *battle of*

Newbury, (Berks), Sept. 20.—Parliament victorious, though the fight was indecisive.

P. com.—Essex.

R. coms.—Charles I. : Rupert.

The field was hotly contested from daylight, the hitherto untried London train-bands displaying the valour and discipline of regular troops, and night, alone, put an end to the contest. The victors lost 500 men,—the Royalists, 1500, and an unusually large number of officers, including Lords Carnarvon, Sunderland, and Falkland, “the glory of the . . . party.”

Next morning, Essex continued his march, and reached London, unmolested. The losses on both sides in this last battle, and the advancing season, soon sent the two armies into winter-quarters.

In the N., and E.,—

There appeared upon the scene, distinguishing themselves by their bravery and military skill, two remarkable men, to whom the issue of the struggle was, finally, due—Sir Thos. Fairfax, and Oliver Cromwell. The latter had, early in the contest, seen the necessity for filling the ranks of the Parliamentary army with “men of decent station, and grave character, fearing God, and zealous for public liberty,” instead of mere mercenaries, and, accordingly, set

about this measure in his own regiment, whose ranks soon consisted of the desiderated material, which he subjected to such a rigid and Puritanic discipline that his troops speedily acquired the nickname of "*Cromwell's Ironsides*," and became noted for stern, invincible, bravery, and fervid, ascetic, religiousness.

Early in the year, the Earl of Newcastle, who commanded the Royalist forces in the North, in opposition to Lord Fairfax, (father of Sir Thomas), succeeded in uniting Northumberland, Cumberland, Westmoreland, and most of Yorkshire, in a league for Charles, and established his authority in those counties. In this quarter, detachments of the opposing forces encountered, later on, in the *battle of*

Wakefield, May 21.—*Parliament* completely *victorious*.

P. com.,—Sir Thomas Fairfax.

R. "—General Geo. Goring.

This engagement was followed by the great *battle of Atherton Moor*, (Yrks.), **June 30.**—*Royalists* decisively *victorious*.

R. com.,—Newcastle.

P. coms.,—Lord Fairfax; Sir Theo. Fairfax.

The Parliamentarians were utterly routed.

Newcastle, then, with 15,000 men, *formed the unsuccessful siege of*

Hull,—of which Hotham had ceased to be Governor, he and his son having been executed, at London, for conspiring to deliver the place up to Newcastle.

In the E., were fought the *battle of*

Gainsborough, July 28.—*Parliament* *victorious*.

P. com.—Cromwell,—his *first victory*.

R. "—General Cavendish, (slain),—and the *battle of*

Winceby, (near Horncastle, Lincoln), **Octr. 11.**—

Parliament *victorious*.

P. coms.—Earl of Manchester; Cromwell.

R. com.—Sir Jno. Henderson.

During this year, (as fully narrated under "*Scotch Affairs*," and "*Irish Affairs*"), the *Parliament* succeeded in enlisting the aid of the *Scotch*, an army of 20,000 men, under the Earl of Leven, being ready by Decr., to march

into England ; while Ormond sent over from Ireland, five regiments for Charles's service in England.

1644, (a grand year for the Parliament) :—

Charles summoned, to Oxford, his head-quarters, a Parliament, which sat, with small results, from Jany. to April, (particulars are given under "Parliamentary and Political Affairs").

In the N.—

The Irish contingent, landed at Mostyn, reduced the greater part of

Cheshire,—and proceeded to form the *siege of*

Nantwich,—to the relief of which town, Fairfax, the younger, hastened, attacking the beleaguers, unexpectedly, in the *battle of*

Nantwich, Jan. 25.—*Parliament victorious.*

P. com.,—Sir Thos. Fairfax.

R. „ —Lord Byron.

A great part of the enemy, (including General Monk), were captured, and large numbers of them deserted the Royal, for the popular, service.

Meanwhile, the Scotch army had crossed the *Border, fruitlessly attacked*

Newcastle, and were, then, kept at bay, shut up in Sunderland, for five weeks, by Newcastle. The conqueror at Nantwich, however, after restoring the county of Cheshire to the Parliamentary side, returning to Yorkshire, attacked a large body of Royalists, in the *battle of*

Selby, Ap. 11.—*Parliament completely victorious.*

P. com.,—Sir Thos. Fairfax.

R. „ —Colonel Bellasis, whose forces were utterly routed.

Newcastle, to avoid being hemmed in between two armies, retreated, and Leven, and Fairfax, effected a junction, and formed the *siege of*

York,—whither Newcastle had retired. At the approach of summer, the investing force was materially strengthened by the advent of the Earl of Manchester, and Cromwell, his lieutenant, with their army, from the East, and the city was closely besieged, and reduced to extremity, when, sent, (from the N.W., where he had been employed), for that purpose, by Charles, (then in

the W.), who feared that the fall of York would ensure his loss of the Northern Counties, Rupert advanced, with 20,000 men, to its relief. At his approach, the besiegers drew off, and prepared to give battle, on Marston Moor.

Rupert, reaching York by another route, and having the Ouse between himself and the enemy, effected a junction with Newcastle, and, then, contrary to the latter's entreaty, but in consonance with the King's orders, marched upon, and engaged the foe, in the *battle of*

Marston Moor, (Yorks.), **July 2.**—*Parliament* grandly *victorious*.

P. coms.—Sir Thomas Fairfax : Earl of Leven : Cromwell, (to whom the victory was mainly owing).

R. coms.—Rupert : Newcastle : Goring.

In this deadly fight, one of the three great decisive battles of the war, (the other two being Naseby, and Worcester), Goring, commanding the left, furiously attacked the Parliamentary cavalry, threw them in confusion upon their infantry, and put the whole wing to rout,—while Newcastle, in the centre, resolutely maintained his ground against the Scots, and Leven, repulsed, and disheartened thereby and by Goring's defeat, fled, believing the battle lost : Cromwell, however, with his Ironsides, opposed to the Royalist right wing, commanded by that dashing *sabreur*, withstood all Rupert's fiery assaults, and, finally, drove his cavalry, pell-mell, from the field.

Returning to the field, the victorious Oliver found the equally successful Goring about to seize on the Parliamentary baggage and carriages, and renewed the fight, both sides re-engaging with exactly counterchanged fronts and positions. Again did the stern valor of the Roundheads prove irresistible : Goring was swept from the field, after a furious struggle, and complete and crushing victory proclaimed itself for the Parliament. The enemy's loss consisted of quite 3,000 slain, 1,500 prisoners, and all their artillery, munitions, and baggage ; while the victors had nearly 1,000 slain.

This engagement would have proved fatal to the King's cause, but for the disaster of Essex, (*re'ated hereafter*), in the W.,—and, as it was, had most disastrous results, one, and not the least, of which was that Newcastle, either piqued at his counsel being slighted by Rupert, or despair-

ing of the Royal cause, retired forthwith, to the Continent, to fight no more for Charles.

Rupert drew off, hastily, into Lancashire.

York was again besieged by the Parliamentarians, and, in a few days, capitulated. Fairfax, then, making the city his head-quarters, established the Parliamentary authority, and completely extinguishing, for ever, Charles's power, throughout the North.

In the S., W., and Centre,—the Royal cause was, on the whole, successful. The first engagement was the *battle of*

Cheryton Down, (near Alresford, Hants), **March 29.**

—*Parliament victorious.*

P. com.—Sir Wm. Waller.

R. „—Lord Hopton.

This was followed, and more than outweighed, by the *battle of*

Cropledy Bridge, (Oxon), **June 29.**—*Royalists victorious.*

R. coms.—Charles I.: Earl of Cleveland.

P. com.—Sir Wm. Waller, who was pursued, with great loss; after which, his army, thoroughly disheartened, deserted wholesale, leaving him so utterly powerless that Charles was able to disregard him, and march westward against Essex, with the main body of the Parliamentary army, in the South. He had retreated into Cornwall, and, now, allowed himself to be surrounded, hopelessly, and cooped up in a corner, by the Royalists, at *Lostwithiel*. Himself, with a few of his officers, succeeded in escaping, by sea, to Plymouth,—and the cavalry, under Balfour, got clear off, during a fog; but Skippon, with all the infantry, artillery, baggage, and munitions, was compelled to surrender,—this being the severest blow the Parliament had received.

They, however, speedily fitted out another force, which they entrusted to Manchester, who engaged the enemy in the *second battle of*

Newbury, **Octr. 27.**—*Parliamentarians victorious*,—but indecisively.

P. coms.—Earl of Manchester; Cromwell.

R. com.—Charles I.

The fight was long and stubborn, and ended in the King's retiring to Oxford,—the campaign thus closing.

(Military movements in Scotland will be found under "Scotch Affairs").

1645:—

In Jany., another attempt, (*narrated under "Parliamentary and Political Affairs"*), was made at negotiation, and commissioners met at Uxbridge, only to find that accommodation was impossible.

In April, (*as narrated under "Parliamentary, &c., Affairs"*), was passed the

Self-denying Ordinance,—the result of which was to place the army in the hands of the Independents, under the nominal command of Fairfax, but actually under that of Cromwell, who had been allowed, as indispensable to the cause, to retain his commission, and had been appointed Lieutenant, (commanding the cavalry), to the quasi-generalissimo.

Having, thus, obtained the virtual control of the forces, Cromwell, under the name of Fairfax, introduced into the army the

New Model.—Out of the existing bodies, new regiments and companies were formed, and fresh officers were appointed, the commands being so manipulated as to place the national forces in the hands of those whom the Independents could trust. At the same time, the discipline of Oliver's Ironsides was extended throughout the forces, while the men were encouraged, by every possible means, to the austere, yet fervid piety, so dear to Cromwell, the officers, to this end, being, to the extrusion of chaplains, entrusted with the spiritual care of their men. "Never, surely, was a more singular army assembled! . . . The . . . soldiers, seized with the . . . spirit" of fanatic and stern devotion, "employed their vacant hours in prayer,—perusing the Holy Scriptures,"—singing psalms and hymns,—delivering and hearing exhortations from "brethren," and in conferences for mutual encouragement and setting forth of "experiences." "They sang psalms as they advanced to the charge,—they called on the name of the Lord while . . . slaying their enemies,"—"they endeavoured to drown the sense of present danger in the prospect of that 'crown of glory' which was set before them."

Long, compounded, Biblical epithets, (e.g., *Zeal-for-the-Lord*; *How-Agag-in-Pieces-before-the-Lord*; *Pray-without-Ceasing*, were adopted in place of Christian names. Much of this was mere cant, and hypocrisy, and amongst these flaming professors were some of the most crafty rogues and abandoned libertines, but, on the whole, the men were profoundly sincere, and rigidly consistent in life. They were animated by the lofty idea that they were the soldiers of the Most High, and that He was with them and their great leader as He had been with Gideon, and other worthies who had "waxed valiant in fight, put to flight the armies of the aliens,"—that they were His chosen people, commissioned to execute his wrath, (as the Israelites were, with regard to the Canaanites), upon their ungodly and licentious foes. Thus animated, and burning, moreover, with a love of liberty, and attachment to their homes, these staunch and dauntless heroes proved irresistible in battle; and when, under the Commonwealth, they fought abroad, carried terror and rout wherever they appeared, and made the name of the English soldier a Continental dread.

Such were the forces with which the new campaign commenced. The Royalists, though the more numerous party, had little, or no, chance before such opponents: the unbridled debauchery and licence, aggravated by want of pay, "rendered" the Cavaliers, generally, "more formidable to their friends than to their enemies."

Under such circumstances, opened the memorable campaign of 1645.

Success smiled upon the Royalists at the commencement. The Parliamentarians, under Weldon, *relieved*

Taunton,—*but were*, almost immediately, *shut up* in the town, *by*

Granville.

The King, himself, marched Northwards, from his winter quarters, and *raised the siege of*

Chester,—*and*, then, on his way back to Oxford, (whither he started on hearing of its being invested by Fairfax), laid siege to, and *captured*,

Leicester, garrisoned by the enemy.

Meanwhile,

Oxford, left exposed by Charles' absence, was invested by Fairfax, who, however, abandoned it, on hearing of the Monarch's successes, and advanced North, with a view to engage him.

The two armies approached to within six miles of each other, before either knew of the other's movements, but, when their proximity was ascertained, Rupert advocated an attack, and won Charles' consent thereto, the result being the *battle of*

Naseby, (near Market Harborough, Northampton),

June 14.—*Parliament decisively victorious.*

P. coms.—Sir Thomas Fairfax : Cromwell : General Ireton, (Cromwell's son-in-law).

R. coms.—Charles I. : Rupert : Sir Marmaduke Langdale.

The contending forces were pretty equal in numbers, and the field was vigorously and stubbornly contested. Rupert, charging with his habitual fury, routed and put to flight the Parliamentary right wing, under Ireton, but, as usual, lost his advantage by imprudence, for, having pursued the fugitives a considerable distance, he wasted time in a useless attack on the enemy's artillery, which was efficiently guarded by infantry. In the centre, where the King commanded, the main body of the infantry had rather the advantage against Fairfax. But Cromwell turned the scales, just as he had done at Marston Moor : commanding the left, he, discomfiting Langdale's horse, sent three squadrons to prevent their rallying,—and, then, turned upon the Royalist infantry, now worn-out with severe fighting, and threw them into hopeless confusion. Rupert reappeared, at this juncture, with his victorious cavalry, but came too late, for, spite of the King's exhortation to them, "One charge more, and the day is recovered"! they saw the odds were too great, and refused to renew the fight, whereupon Charles left the field and the victory to the enemy.

The triumph of the Parliament was complete, and decisive of the Civil War, as far as this reign was concerned. The Royalists lost 800 killed and 5,000 prisoners, including 500 officers ; all their artillery and munitions ; and had their infantry almost dissipated,—while their opponents had but 1000 missing. But the most serious incident of this disastrous field for the King was the loss of

his *private cabinet*, which fell into the victors' hands, containing, as it did, documents, (*see* "**Parliamentary and Political Affairs**"), proving his dishonesty and treachery in his dealings with the Parliament. Even the Royalists began to lose respect for him, and confidence in his cause.

After the battle, Charles, with the unbroken cavalry, retired into Wales, (whither, at the commencement of the campaign, he had sent the Prince of Wales, *æt.* 15, with the title of "General," and orders that he should, if pressed by the foe, escape to the Continent, and, so, preserve one branch, at least, of the Royal Family), and there remained for some time, vainly endeavouring to raise forces.

Rupert went West, and assumed the defence of Bristol, while

Taunton was *invested*, by **Goring**, who, however, raised the siege, at the approach of **Fairfax**, who followed him to, and drove him from, the open town of

Langport,—and, then, took, successively,

Bridgewater (*defended* by Colonel Edmund Windham, Governor : the outer town was taken by storm, whereupon the garrison, 2,600 strong, *capitulated*, **July 23**); **Bath**; and **Shelborne**,—after which, he formed the siege of

Bristol.—*Parliament victorious.*

P. com.—**Fairfax.**

R. com.—**Rupert.**

It had been expected that Rupert would make a splendid and protracted defence ; instead of this, no sooner had the enemy entered the lines, by storm, than he *capitulated*, **Sept. 11**, after only a few days' siege.

Charles, who had built much on his nephew's holding this city, and was anxiously collecting means for its relief, was overwhelmed with astonishment and vexation at the *fiasco*,—little less fatal to his cause than had been the terrible day at Naseby. In his anger, he cancelled all Rupert's commissions, and sent him a free pass to leave England.

From this point, the affairs of the King simply dropped to pieces. He raised the siege of

Hereford, which the Scots had formed, but this was the last ray of sunshine which he enjoyed. From Hereford, he advanced to attempt to raise the siege of

Chester, the only port by which he could keep up communication with Ireland,—but his forces were encountered by the enemy in the *battle of*

Rowton Heath, (near Chester).—*Parliament victorious.*

P. coms.—Colonels Poyntz, and Jones.

R. com.—Sir Marmaduke Langdale.

The Royal army was completely shattered, in this engagement, with a loss of 600 slain, and 1000 prisoners.

With the poor remnant of his forces, Charles escaped to Newark, and, thence, to Oxford, where he wintered.

Fairfax, however, continued in the field, and succeeded in reducing all the West, while Cromwell did the same in the Centre. The Prince of Wales, according to his father's orders, retired to the Continent, joining his mother at Paris. To these disasters, was added the destruction of the King's hopes in Scotland, (for battles, &c., in which country, during this year, see "*Scotch Affairs*").

His cause having now become hopeless, the King made, during the winter, repeated overtures of peace, but Parliament rejected his proposals, their refusal becoming the more decided, (while popular indignation was roused to a terrible pitch), upon the discovery, (see "*Irish Affairs*"), of the King's treaty with the Irish rebels. In

1646:—

Fairfax, with a numerous and triumphant army, leaving his quarters, *marched upon Oxford*, with the intention of besieging the city. Charles, seeing resistance to be useless, and his own capture inevitable, *fled* from Oxford to Newark, and *gave himself up to the Scots*, whose camp was at that place, (May 5).

Oxford surrendered, (in consequence of Charles's orders, issued, by direction of the Scots, to it and all his other garrisons), on excellent terms, **June 24**. Rupert and Maurice received passports, and left the kingdom for France, and the Duke of York was conveyed to London. The

CIVIL WAR was **RENEWED 1648:—**

Cause.—The *harsh line of procedure*, (narrated under "*Parliamentary and Political Affairs*"), pursued by the *Parliament*, under the influence of the army and the Independents, *towards Charles*, which brought about a reaction in his favor.

The Royalists in England were, in this movement, supported by the Scotch, (*see* "Scotch Affairs"), under the Duke of Hamilton.

(The incidents of this revival of hostilities are, frequently, styled, the "Second Civil War," (those from the commencement of the struggle down to Naseby being termed, the "First Civil War.") But there seems no need for such a distinction : there was, in reality, but *one* Civil War, which began in 1642, and ended, (as far as England was concerned), in 1651, with the Battle of Worcester).

Events:—In the W.—

Seventeen ships, lying in the Thames Mouth, *declared for Charles*, and, setting their admiral ashore, *sailed to Holland*, where the Prince of Wales *took command* of them. A fresh *squadron* was fitted out, and, *under the Earl of Warwick*, sent out to oppose the deserted vessels.

Colonel Poyer, and other Presbyterian officers, raised a force of 8,000 Welshmen, and *seized Pembroke Castle*. The movement was deemed so serious that Cromwell himself was despatched to put it down. Entering the Principality, he *formed the siege of*

Pembroke.—Parliament victorious, the town and castle *capitulating*, after six weeks' siege, July 11.

P. com.—Cromwell.

R. com.—Colonel Poyer.

In the E.—

The Royalists occupied, and the Parliamentary forces formed the *siege of*,

Colchester.—Parliament victorious, the town *capitulating*, Aug. 28, after over two months' siege.

P. com.—Fairfax.

R. coms.—Earl of Norwich : Lord Capel.

Fairfax, most unjustifiably, caused two of the brave defenders, Sir George Lisle, and Sir Charles Lucas, to be shot, reserving Norwich, and Capel, for the judgment of Parliament. *This engagement terminated this portion of the struggle, in England.*

In the N.—

Sir Marmaduke Langdale, and Sir Phillip Musgrave, who had levied considerable forces, were *joined by the Scotch contingent*, under Hamilton. Cromwell, after reducing

Pembroke, hurried across country, and, with a force only half as numerous as theirs, engaged the Royalists in the *battle of*

Preston, Aug. 17.—*Parliament victorious.*

P. com.—Cromwell.

R. coms.—Duke of Hamilton : Sir Marmaduke Langdale.

The fight was desperate, lasting six hours. Cromwell pursued Hamilton to Uttoxeter, and compelled him to surrender, and, then, marched into Scotland, where, (*see* "Scotch Affairs"), he remained two months, reducing the Royalist rising.

WAR IN SCOTLAND,—(*see* "Scotch Affairs").

HOSTILITIES IN IRELAND,—(*see* "Irish Affairs").

PLOTS, AND REBELLIONS.

1. Waller's Plot,—*see* "Civil War".

2. Irish Rebellion,—*see* "Irish Affairs".

PARLIAMENTARY, AND OTHER POLITICAL, AFFAIRS.

To appreciate the state of matters in 1640, it is necessary to present a

Sketch of Affairs from Charles's Accession to the Assembling of his Fourth Parliament:—

During James I.'s reign, there had become developed, in Parliament, two great parties—the *Court Party*, supporters of the Royal prerogative ; and the *Country Party*, in favour of the liberties of the people.

In Charles's

FIRST PARLIAMENT, JUNE 18—AUG. 12, 1625,—this latter party formed a majority, united, determined, and able, (including such men as Sir Ed. Coke, Sir Thos. Wentworth, Sir Dudley Digges, John Selden, and John Pym). Its members, who had viewed with dislike and apprehension James's arbitrary measures, and who had their suspicions as to Charles's predilections, took advantage of their prerogative of granting supplies to hold the purse-strings until they had assurances that existing grievances would be redressed, and Constitutional principles regulate the new King's conduct, and *Charles, finding that they would not vote him full supplies uncon-*

ditionally, dissolved Parliament, on pretence of the Plague approaching Oxford.

To raise the money which he wanted, specially for the Spanish War, *Charles* now proceeded to issue privy-seals for obtaining forced loans from his subjects, exciting, by this first step in that unconstitutional course which, eventually, proved his ruin, the disgust of the people.

The failure of an expedition to Cadiz aggravated the popular discontent, while it so increased his necessities as to compel him to call together his

SECOND PARLIAMENT, FEB. 6—JUNE 15, 1626,—which, in spite of his having managed, by making them sheriffs, in excluding some of the most prominent of the Country Party, was as determined as the last. The Commons first granted a meagre supply, on condition that they should investigate and reform grievances in every department of Government,—and, having done this, impeached Buckingham, (whom Bristol, also, accused in the Lords), as the fountain-head of mischief, promising ample money-votes when justice should be meted out to him. *Charles*, however, to save his favorite, dissolved Parliament.

During this session, *the King* was guilty of two serious breaches of the Constitution, viz.,—

1. *Endeavouring*, by withholding his writ of summons, and, then, by private command, to prevent the *Earl of Bristol*, Buckingham's enemy in the Peers, from taking his seat : the Lords, however, vindicated his right, and he sat.

2. *Committing to the Tower*, for their bold utterances on the question of Buckingham's impeachment, *Digges*, and *Eliot* : the Commons refused to transact any business till the two should be released, and, so, compelled *Charles* to set them free.

Charles now proceeded to raise money by illegal taxation,—levying tonnage and poundage,—requiring the maritime towns, with assistance of the adjacent counties, 10 arm, each, a prescribed number of vessels,—and imposing a forced general loan, according to every man's assessment in the subsidy, which the Commons had promised conditionally only. To exact this last, commissioners were appointed, and those who refused to pay were imprisoned, amongst these being 78 gentlemen, five of whom, suing out their Habeas Corpus, appeared before the King's

Bench, to try the legality of their incarceration, which their counsel declared contrary to *Magna Charta*. To this, the Attorney-General pleaded that the committal was not in the ordinary legal way, but by special mandate of the King, and that, as "the King can do no wrong," it must be presumed that there was good and sufficient reason for his conduct. The judges decided in favor of the Crown, and the appellants were re-committed !

To add to the indignation excited by these monstrous proceedings, *Charles* went to war with France, and sent out a disastrous expedition, under Buckingham, to Rochelle, —and actually attempted to billet soldiers on private individuals, and to enforce martial law.

Want of means to carry on the French War compelled the King to summon a

THIRD PARLIAMENT, MARCH 17, 1628,—MARCH 10, 1629,—the elections proving strongly in favour of the Country Party, which led Charles to release those in prison for refusing to pay the Loan. The King warned them, in his first speech, that if *they* would not, *he* must, as he might think best, provide for the needs of the State. Unmoved, the Commons passed a vote against arbitrary imprisonments and forced loans, and, then, agreed to grant five subsidies, on condition of the King's assenting to the celebrated

Petition of Right, (the second great bulwark of our liberties). It pronounced illegal,

1. Obtaining supplies in any manner without the sanction of an Act of Parliament ; and prosecuting, or imprisoning, any one refusing to pay money illegally exacted.

2. Quartering soldiers and sailors on private individuals.

3. "Commissions for proceeding by martial law."

After considerable shuffling, and attempting to palm off on them an evasive assent, Charles, seeing that there was no other way of obtaining the subsidies voted, and that Buckingham's impeachment was being again spoken of, set his fiat to the Bill, in the customary words.

The subsidies were now granted, but the Commons continuing their scrutiny of abuses, and their accusation of Buckingham, and preparing a Remonstrance against levying tonnage and poundage, *Charles* abruptly prorogued the sitting, June 26, 1628.

During recess, the entire failure of the Rochelle Expedition greatly embittered the feeling of Parliament against the King, and when it re-assembled, Jan. 20, 1629, many other causes of complaint presented themselves, the chief being that *the copies of the Petition of Right made public had the Monarch's evasive reply attached*,—that the Court patronized the Arminian clergy, who supported the high claims of prerogative put forth by Charles; and that Laud, one of the leaders of the party, had been made Bishop of London,—and, (worst grievance of all), that *tonnage and poundage had been exacted during the recess, by the Royal command alone*: to which charges, Selden added that one, Savage, had, by arbitrary sentence of the Star-Chamber, lost his ears.

The debates on the Arminian question, (during which Cromwell made his first speech in Parliament), and those on tonnage and poundage were hotly debated, and, finally, in spite of the opposition of the Speaker, who, acting for Charles, declared that he had orders to put no question, but to adjourn, the House passed three

Resolutions,—condemning as capital enemies to their country any who should

1. Introduce Popery, Arminianism, or any other change in religion.

2. Advise the King to exact tonnage and poundage, without consent of Parliament.

3. Pay tonnage and poundage illegally levied.

During the passing of these Resolutions, the Speaker was forcibly held in his chair, and the door kept locked against the *Gentleman Usher of the Lords*, who, by the *King's order*, as soon as he could gain admission, removed the mace from the table, thus ending the proceedings. A few days after, *Parliament was dissolved*, and several members of the popular party, (termed, by Charles, "Vipers"), committed to prison, for their share in the closing scene of the session, and there kept for some time.

Eliot, Hollis, and Valentine, were summoned before the King's Bench, on a charge of seditious language in the House, and, refusing to appear to answer before a court inferior to Parliament, were condemned to imprisonment during the Royal pleasure, to find sureties for their good behaviour, and to be fined, Hollis and Eliot £1000, and Valentine £500. They all refused to deliver themselves

on such terms, and Eliot died in prison, 1632, regarded as a martyr to freedom.

During the session of his third Parliament, *the King succeeded*, by judicious bestowment of honors, in winning over to his side *some of the leaders of the popular party*, chief amongst whom were Sir Thomas Wentworth, who was created, successively, Baron, (Strafford), Viscount, and Privy-Councillor; Digges, made Master of the Rolls; Noy, appointed Attorney-General; and Littleton, raised to the Solicitor-Generalship.

Charles had, on dissolving Parliament, declared his intention of governing alone, in accordance with which determination he *summoned no Parliament from March, 1629, to April, 1640!*

During these eleven years, the government, both in State and Church, was conducted in the most arbitrary manner, the King's chief advisers being Wentworth, (who, first as President of the North, and, then, as Viceroy in Ireland, ruled with despotic sway, his plan, which he denominated "Thorough", being to make the King supreme and absolute),—and Laud, (whose influence was nearly as great in civil, as in Ecclesiastical, matters, and who, with his followers, repaid Charles's indulgence for their High Church usages, and superstitions, by magnifying the Royal prerogative).

The King's arbitrary principles, and disregard for his subjects' liberties and welfare were, in the course of this period, manifested specially in three particulars:—

1. *Illegal methods of raising money.*—Tonnage and poundage were levied by his sole authority,—the rates on merchandize were increased, and the goods of those refusing the new tariff seized, and sold,—compositions in cash were made, with Popish recusants, for toleration,—fines were inflicted, (under an old law of Edward II., other obsolete statutes, also, being revived for purposes of extortion), on those entitled to, but not assuming, knighthood,—titles to land were questioned, and holders of at all misty character mulcted,—monopolies were revived, and extended,—and Ship-Money, (a tax originally levied on maritime places, in time of war, to provide vessels), exacted, (not for its proper purpose, but, as Clarendon owns, to be "a spring and magazine that should have no bottom, and for an everlasting supply on all occa-

sions"), not only from the coast, but from the inland, counties.

2. *His encroachments on the personal liberty of his subjects*,—by means of the ordinary Law-courts, over which servile judges presided, and, especially, through the agency of the Courts of Star Chamber, and of High Commission, which enforced the illegal methods of raising the revenue just named,—protected the King's agents,—issued proclamations enjoining, or forbidding, what the laws did not enforce, or reprehend,—and inflicted cruel and unreasonable fines, and other punishments.

3. *His outrages on the popular religious sentiments*,—shewn, especially, in his support of the Arminian clergy and their practices, and in his *reissuing* the "*Book of Sports*," and renewing his father's edict allowing recreations after church on the Sabbath, which the clergy were all ordered to read, from the pulpit, the Puritans refusing to do so being heavily fined.

This course of despotic misrule did not fail, from the first, to excite the indignation and alarm of the nation. But it was not till John Hampden, in 1637, resisted the payment of Ship-Money, levied on him, a country gentleman, (the majority of the judges, however, on the trial, deciding against him), that the people realized fully the terrible danger they were in of entire subversion of their liberties.

But, even then, matters might have long remained *in statu quo*, had it not been for Charles's endeavour to thrust Episcopacy upon the Scots, and the resistance made thereto by that people.

Affairs from the Calling of Charles's Fourth Parliament to His Execution, 1640-1649:—

Hostilities with the Scotch becoming inevitable, in the latter part of 1639, Charles, with great difficulty, re-collected an army, in place of the one disbanded by him, from want of funds, after the Pacification of Berwick,—but speedily finding that he would be unable to maintain the expenses of a war, yielded to the advice of his Council, and summoned his

FOURTH, ("the SHORT"), PARLIAMENT, AP. 13—MAY 5, 1640.—The Country Party, led by Pym, Hampden, Cromwell, Hollis, St. John, and others, were, again, in a majority. Charles, who had, with this end in view, pur-

posely postponed the elections till close upon the time for commencing the campaign against the Scots, pressed the Commons to proceed immediately to vote him a grant, before entering upon the discussion of grievances, promising them that he would, afterwards, allow them as much as possible of the session for such enquiry. But the sagacious leaders, seeing that the moment had arrived when the liberties of the nation might be fully vindicated, disregarded his entreaties, and stolidly passed, before voting a penny, to investigate abuses, commencing with the conduct of the Speaker, on the last day of the preceding Parliament, which they declared a breach of privilege,—then, entering upon the matter of the prosecution and imprisonment of Eliot, the levying of ship-money, and other illegal taxes, &c., the oppressions of the Star Chamber and High Commission Court, and innovations in religion.

The King, in vain, sent repeated messages to the House, and, finally, to bring the matter to an issue, offered, if they would vote him 12 subsidies, (= about £840,000), payable in three years, to give up ship-money, (worth about £200,000). To this, they, justly, replied that, were they to consent, they would be tacitly ratifying its imposition, and encouraging like encroachments in the future. Thereupon, Charles *abruptly dissolved* Parliament,—a proceeding which, afterwards, when he found himself in the power of the merciless Long Parliament, he bitterly repented, for this assembly, throughout its brief session, “managed,” says Clarendon, its “debates”, and “whole behaviour, with wonderful order and propriety.”

This sudden dissolution excited popular discontent, and *there ensued a*

Riot, in London,—a mob, 500 strong, attacking Lambeth Palace, where Laud was, and another body entering St. Paul's, where was sitting the High Commission Court, tearing down the benches, and crying, “No bishop! No High Commission!” To this first gust of the rising storm of popular rebellion, however, the Court was blind.

To obtain money for the Scotch War, the King now adopted various expedients. From Convocation, (which continued to sit till the end of May, and drew up canons inculcating the Divine right of Kings, and the duty of passive obedience), he obtained a grant of £120,000, and from voluntary subscriptions £300,000,—while Ship-Money,

and other still more illegal imposts, were freely resorted to. With these supplies, the King was enabled to equip his army, and prepare it to march.

The Scotch, (see "*Scotch Affairs*"), soon after marched into England, defeated Conway, at Newburn-on-Tyne, and occupied Newcastle, whereupon *Charles*, who, with his army, was at York, feeling himself unable to prevent them from marching South, consented to negotiate with the enemy. To this end, to avoid a Parliament, he *summoned to York, a*

Council of Peers, (a feudal assembly, defunct centuries before). While they were assembling, he received from some of the peers, and from London, petitions for a regular Parliament, and, foreseeing that it would insist upon that measure, he, as soon as it met, announced to the Council that he intended to call together again the two Houses. Accordingly, writs were issued, and, shortly, there met *Charles's* renowned

FIFTH, (or "**LONG**"), **PARLIAMENT**,—*assembled NOV. 3, 1640,—purged Dec. 6, 1648,—the remnant ejected, by Cromwell, April 20, 1653,—re-assembled May 7, 1659,—shut out Oct. 13, 1659,—re-assembled Dec. 26, 1659,—and finally dissolved itself, MARCH 16, 1660.* The elections were greatly in favor of the popular party, who, consequently, came to their duties jubilant and resolute, to concert measures for the establishment of public liberty.

Their first act was to choose, as Speaker, Lenthall, in opposition to *Charles's* nominee, Gardiner, Recorder of London.

They then *proceeded*, without any interval, to investigate grievances, adopting, as the result, various practical measures, of which the principal were as follows:

1. The reversal of the sentences on, and the release and compensation of, *Prynne*, *Leighton*, *Bastwick*, *Burton*, and other victims of Star Chamber, and High Commission,—some of whom were suffering imprisonment in the Scilly, and Channel, Islands. When these prisoners landed in England, they were welcomed with mighty enthusiasm, splendidly feted, and laden with presents.

2. *Strafford*, and *Laud*, were impeached of High Treason,—a decisive blow, since they had been *Charles's* chief ministers.

Strafford, snuffing danger, had feared to present himself in this Parliament, but Charles, who could ill spare his counsels and support, induced him to alter his decision, promising, (so little did he realize his own danger), that he would so protect him that not a hair of his head should be injured.

The Commons, sitting with locked doors, unanimously voted a general impeachment of Strafford, and Pym was chosen to carry it up to the Lords. Just as he, accompanied by the majority of the House, presented himself in the Upper Chamber, the accused, all unsuspecting, entered, and was, immediately, ordered into custody, Nov. 11, a little over a week after Parliament had met.

Next month, after another debate, of less than half an hour, a like impeachment was voted against Laud, who was, thereupon, also committed to custody, Dec. 18.

Dreading a similar fate, Lord Keeper Finch, and Sir Thomas Windebank, the Secretary, fled to the Continent.

3. All persons who had assumed powers not authorized by Statute were declared "Delinquents," (a term lately come into vogue as meaning one whose kind or degree of guilt was not precisely ascertained). Under this denomination, were included all who had aided in illegal taxation, and in the arbitrary working of the Star Chamber, &c., (all the King's ministers, and the members of the Council being, thus, involved), and even the bishops and clergy who had voted in the last sitting of Convocation. This measure virtually transferred the whole sovereign power to the Commons.

(It is noteworthy that, at this period, the most moderate men, and the most attached to the Monarchy and the Church, (*e.g.*, Hyde, Falkland, and Digby), "exerted themselves" equally with such advanced politicians as Pym, St. John, and Vane, "in the redress of grievances, and in prosecuting the authors of them." Though in their ultimate views and intentions these men differed widely from those with whom they now acted, yet "in their present actions and discourses an entire concurrence and unanimity were observed.")

4. Zealous measures were adopted for reforming abuses in the Established Church,—the chief of which were

1. The introduction of a Bill excluding clergymen from civil offices, and, consequently, depriving the Bishops of their seats in the Lords,—an act which the Peers threw out.

2. Compelling the King to issue orders for the removal of all Romanists from the Court and the Army,—the disarming of all recusants,—and the banishment of Papist clergymen.

3. Issuing, by its own authority, an Order for “the defacing, demolishing, and quite taking away of all images, altars, or tables turned altarwise, crucifixes, superstitious pictures, monuments, and reliques of idolatry, out of all churches and chapels.”

The execution of this mandate was entrusted to Sir Robert Harley, and other zealots and ignoramuses, who committed wholesale and lamentable havoc throughout the country, destroying, in their blind, stupid, bigoted, malice, magnificent monuments, and beautiful works of art, and defacing every atom of ornament, whether stone, wood, or glass, in the churches, &c.

Amongst the ruin wrought by these ikonoklasts was the demolition of the Crosses of Cheapside and Charing.

4. The appointment of a “Committee of Scandalous Ministers,”—to act as inquisitors upon the clergy. This famous body existed, and worked vigorously, for several years, doing much execution on churches and Universities.

While all these measures were being carried out, the Scotch army remained in England, and the Commons, realizing its value in keeping the King in subjection, announced their intention of retaining it, and continued to vote sums for its subsistence, as long as it remained. At the same time, they skilfully continued to be always in debt, so as to render the continuance of the session necessary.

Parliament proceeded with its work of reformation, in 1641,—its chief measures being as follows:—

1. **Triennial Act**,—providing that Parliament

1. Must be summoned at least every third year. In default of the Chancellor’s issuing the writs, the peers were to do so,—in default of these acting, the sheriffs, mayors, and bailiffs, were to summon the voters,—and, finally, these failing in their duty, the voters were to

assemble, and elect their representatives, as if writs had been issued.

2. Could not be dissolved, prorogued, or adjourned, for at least 50 days after meeting, without its own consent.

The importance of this Act, when viewed in connection with Charles's abrupt dissolutions of Parliament, cannot be over-estimated.

2. (Later on, after Strafford's trial), **A Bill enacting that Parliament should not be dissolved, prorogued, or adjourned**, without its own consent.

3. **The Attainder of Strafford**, (for particulars of which, and of his execution, *see* sketch of his life, under "**Celebrated Persons**").

4. **A Bill abolishing the Star Chamber, the High Commission Court, and other arbitrary tribunals**, *viz.*, those of the Council of Wales, the Council of the North, and the Earl Marshal, and regulating the King's Council, the Stannary Court, and the Forest Court.

Early in August, the articles of pacification being completed, the *Scotch and English armies were disbanded, and Charles took a journey into Scotland, determined to win the favour of the Scotch*, so that, in case of the foreshadowing need thereof coming upon him, he might obtain their aid against his own people. He was accompanied by a Committee of both Houses, appointed, professedly to see that the articles of the pacification should be carried out, really to act as spies upon him, and neutralize any efforts he might make to win the people to his side.

The result of this visit, (for particulars of which see "Scotch Affairs"), was, on the whole, satisfactory, the King's complaisance, in even religious worship, earning him golden opinions, though the matter of the "Incident" excited considerable distrust in the popular mind.

Meanwhile, *Parliament adjourned*, for a few weeks' recess, appointing, however, (a thing hitherto unheard of), a Committee of both Houses, (as a kind of Committee of Vigilance), with ample powers, to sit during the vacation.

The reassembly took place Oct. 26, and, shortly after, came news of the terrible outbreak in Ireland of 1641, (see "Irish Affairs"), followed by a message from Charles, from Scotland, declaring that he committed entirely to their care and wisdom the prosecution of the war.

The reception of this news increased the animosity of Parliament against the Papists and the High Church Party, and their suspicions of the King, who, they firmly believed, was at the bottom of the Rebellion, or, at any rate, designed to employ it, for his own purposes, against them. Accordingly, the steps they took professedly for quelling the rising were really for their own advantage in the struggle which they had already begun to anticipate as possible : thus they levied money, but kept it,—and took arms from the Royal magazines, and retained them for their own contingent purposes.

Meanwhile, *the King returned from Scotland*, and met with a most enthusiastic reception in London.

The popular leaders, fearing lest the King should be encouraged by this demonstration, by the good impression which he had created in Scotland, and by the rising in Ireland, to attempt the reëstablishment of despotic government, determined to obtain fresh guarantees for liberty, and, especially, to completely crush the hierarchy. Preparatory to taking such measures, they, to vindicate their own conduct, to shew that their distrust in the King was well founded, and to excite the people against him and his advisers and supporters, especially in the Church, drew up a

Remonstrance on the state of the Kingdom, addressed to the people, and consisting of 209 articles, in which they

1. Enumerated, with pitiless minuteness, every arbitrary, suspicious, and mean, measure and act done or sanctioned by Charles, from the commencement of his reign down to that session of Parliament.

2. Gave an account of all the reforms which they had carried out, with the obstruction they had met with in passing them ; “ of the courses to be taken for the removing ” of remaining “ obstacles, and for the accomplishing of their most dutiful and faithful endeavours of restoring and establishing the ancient honor, greatness, and security, of the Crown and nation.”

3. Laid the blame of all Charles’s commissions and omissions, (which, they alleged, amounted to a complete subversion of the Constitution), upon a malignant Papist faction, which had ever swayed the King’s counsels, and had endeavoured to introduce their superstitions into

England and Scotland, and had now excited a bloody revolution in Ireland,—and prayed the King to dismiss such advisers, and employ those only possessing the confidence of Parliament.

This Remonstrance was hotly debated, encountering, unlike preceding measures of kindred aim, severe opposition, and passing the Commons, at last, after 14 hours' discussion, by the small majority of 11 only, (Nov 22). Shortly after, without even laying it before the Peers, the Commons caused the document to be printed, and published.

It was on occasion of the debate upon this Remonstrance that the hitherto united Commons split up into two parties—*Royalists, and Parliamentarians*. The former, (including Hyde, and Falkland), who thenceforth led the King's supporters, fully admitted the grievances against Charles, but considered that, as he had allowed them to remedy the main abuses, further opposition was uncalled for, and that the Remonstrance was vexatious,—while the advanced Liberals, (*e.g.*, Pym, Hampden, St. John, and Cromwell), utterly distrusted their sovereign, saw treachery and duplicity in his recent actions, and felt it imperative upon them to reduce him to perfect impotency to harm the nation. *Amongst the Peers, too, there was a revulsion, the majority, (who had, hitherto, supported the Commons), considering that the popular party were going too far, and threatening the country with democratic government, and, consequently, ranging themselves on the side of Charles.*

The King received the Remonstrance with indignation, and, very decidedly, replied to the Commons that he had never refused to redress real grievances, but that he should certainly retain the choice of his ministers in his own hands.

Popular dissatisfaction now rapidly increased, the hostility of the people being directed, by the wording of the Remonstrance, and by the sermons which the Commons caused to be everywhere preached against Papists and malignants, towards the bishops, to whom was attributed, also, the opposition made in the Peers to popular measures, and the *prelates were mobbed at Westminster*. In consequence of this, they began to absent themselves from the House.

Williams, Archbishop of York, being thus insulted, (owing, partly, to his own indiscretion), induced 11 of his brethren to join him in signing, (Dec. 28), a

Protest,—declaring that, as they were prevented, by violence, from attending Parliament, “all laws, votes, and resolutions, that should pass during the period of their constrained absence were null and void.”

The Commons, enraged at this attempt to nullify the subsequent doings of Parliament, instituted an

Impeachment of the Bishops signing, for **High Treason**. No one spoke in their favor except Falkland, who considered them merely mad, and fit subjects for Bedlam, and the impeachment passed,—the Upper House approved,—and the unfortunate prelates were committed to the Tower, (Decr. 30). Their conduct had been illegal, but that of Parliament was equally so.

Meanwhile, riots continued at Westminster, those prelates and members who adhered to the Crown meeting with insult and reproach from the mob supporting the popular party, who, moreover, were not chary of abuse and menace of the King. On the other hand, numbers of reduced officers, and young students of the Inns of Court, ranged themselves on the side of the sovereign, and frequent, and sometimes sanguinary, fights occurred between the two factions, with whose antagonism originated the nicknames

“**Cavalier**,” and “**Roundhead**,”—the latter being bestowed, by their foes, upon the rabble, on account of their short-cropped hair,—the former being given, in return, sarcastically.

And now arrived the fatal, irrevocable, moment when, by one rash, high-handed, deed, the King upset all the good his past concessions had done, and set a light to the train that was destined to shatter his cause to atoms, involving himself in the ruin.

This deed was the

Impeachment, and Attempted Arrest, of the Five Members of the Commons.—The demands of the Remonstrance, with the Impeachment of the Bishops, made it evident to Charles that Parliament would not stop short of the aim they had set themselves in the former, and that, to arrive thither, they would stick at no one and nothing. Unwisely, then, he determined to overawe and constrain them, by punishing their leaders.

Accordingly, *Herbert*, the *Attorney-General*, appearing in

the Lords, Jan., 1642 *impeached* of high treason, *Lord Kimbolton, and five Commoners, Hollis, Hazelrig, Hampden, Pym, and Strode*, the following being the offences alleged against them :—

1. Attempting to subvert the laws of the Kingdom, and the King's rightful authority.

2. Endeavouring to alienate the people from the King, by odious calumnies.

3. Engaging Scotland, a foreign power, to invade the country.

4. Exciting against the King and Parliament seditious assemblages.

5. Levying war against the King.

To Herbert's demand, the Peers answered only by appointing a committee to seek for precedents.

Immediately after, a Sergeant-at-arms demanded the Five, of the Lower House, in the King's name, but was sent back without any decided answer. Messengers were then despatched to seek and arrest them, their studies, chambers, and trunks, being all searched, all which the Commons voted to be breaches of privilege, commanding every one to defend the freedom of the Members.

Euraged at this opposition, *the King went down*, the next day, in person, *to the Commons*, attended by his usual retinue, 200 in number, armed, as customary, with halberts, and walking small-swords, *with the intention of seizing the Five*, who, however, being forewarned, *were absent*. Leaving his guard at the door, he entered,—passed up the floor, the Members respectfully standing,—took the chair, vacated for him by the Speaker,—and demanded the accused, asking the Speaker whether they were in the House, to which he, falling on his knees, nobly replied that he had neither eyes to see, nor tongue to speak, there, save as the House might direct, and asking pardon that he could give no other reply.

Charles responded that he could see the birds were flown, but that he looked to the House to send them to him, since they were guilty of foul treason,—and promised them a fair trial. The assembly showed the utmost confusion, and, as the King retired, several Members cried, loudly, "Privilege ! Privilege !" The sitting was then adjourned to the next day, and, in the evening, the accused removed.

for safety, into the City, where the citizens remained all night under arms.

By this insane act, Charles "violated Magna Charta, and the precedent of centuries," and shewed himself as ready as ever to rule despotically, for these members, if guilty of any offence out of Parliament, were amenable to the ordinary law-courts, while for their conduct in Parliament they were responsible to their peers, and might have been accused and tried constitutionally, by them. This piece of violence embittered Charles's enemies, and alienated numbers of those who had begun to think favourably of him. With it, "the *Constitutional* period of this great contest may be said to have terminated. From that day the *Revolution*" virtually "commenced."

The next morning, Charles, visiting the City, had his eyes opened to the mischief he had done, for, while the Common Council, whom he addressed, at Guildhall, very graciously, treated him with cold silence, the populace along his route greeted him with cries of "Privilege of Parliament!" and one even approached, and threw into his carriage a paper inscribed "To your tents, O Israel," (the Hebrew rallying-call of revolt). The House of Commons, too, on meeting, shewed the greatest apprehension, and decided on adjourning, for safety's sake, for a few days, appointing a committee of their number to sit, meanwhile, in Merchant-Tailors' Hall, and enquire into the outrage, the result of the investigation being a

Resolution that the King intended to offer violence to Parliament, and to murder all who should resist. At next session, the Commons received, and confirmed, the decision of its committee, and again adjourned, (as though in instant peril), arranging for the safe and triumphant return of the accused members on the day of re-assembling.

The King, deserted and menaced, at this juncture judging "prudence" to be "the better part of valor," retired, (not to re-visit London, till he entered it a prisoner), to *Hampton Court*, the evening before the restoration of the accused.

On that eventful day, (Jan. 11), a week after the attempted seizure, *the Five were conveyed, in triumph, to Westminster* by river, which was alive with boats and other craft, armed with small cannon, ready for fight,—and, on landing, were received by 4,000 horsemen, who had ridden

up from Buckinghamshire, to demonstrate their attachment to, and to protect, Hampden. The assembled crowds again manifested strong excitement, shouting, as they passed Whitehall, "What has become of the King and his Cavaliers? and whither are they fled?"

To Parliament, thus reassembled, were presented shoals of petitions of the most seditious and violent character, from all classes, including the apprentices, the porters, broken-down tradesmen, and even the female sex, thousands of whom signed a document expressive of horror of the Papists and the High-Church prelates, and of their dread of outrages like those just perpetrated in Ireland,—and followed the bearer, a brewer's wife, to the House to present it.

In the Commons, the general feeling now was that there must be an appeal to arms, and, in view of this eventuality, they passed, Jan. 13, a

Vote for

1. Obtaining possession of Hull, (where was a large magazine of arms, &c.), Portsmouth, and the Tower, and

2. Ordering the Kingdom to be put in a state of defence, "against the enterprises of Papists, and other ill-affected persons."

The Peers refused their concurrence with this latter, but steps were taken to carry out the former, measure, Sir Jno. Hotham, a Yorkshire gentleman, being made Governor, in the interest of Parliament, of Hull,—and Goring, Governor of Portsmouth, receiving instructions, (which he refused to heed), to obey the orders of Parliament only.

A few days after the passing of this vote, Charles sent, (Jan. 20), a

Message to the House, offering any reparation the members might demand for his late breach of privilege, and also asking them to formulate all their *grievances*, with a promise of a favorable and speedy consideration thereof.

Their main demand, in response, was the transference of the control of the forts, (before named), and of the militia to persons nominated by Parliament,—which the King flatly refused. At the same time, however, he gave his consent to

1. **A Bill**, (resulting from the Impeachment), excluding Bishops from Parliament.

2. **An Act authorizing the Impressment of Men for Service in Ireland.**

The Royal refusal to consent to the preceding demands made accommodation an almost impossibility.

The Commons, realizing the vital importance of having control of the forces, passed for that purpose, a

Militia Bill, (Feb.),—by which the *militia* was placed under the control of Lord, and Deputy, Lieutenants, (named in the Bill), in the confidence of, and accountable to, *Parliament, instead of to the King*. To this vitally important measure the Peers agreed.

Charles was at Dover, seeing to the embarkation of the Queen, (whom he was despatching to the Continent, for reasons elsewhere given), and the Princess of Orange, when his consent to this Bill was demanded. He, at first, *tried evasion*, whereupon he was pressed the more severely, with a threat that, if he refused his sanction, the Houses would dispose of the Militia as they pleased; and, at the same time, he was invited to take up his abode in London. To the threat, *Charles*, still withholding assent to the Bill, *replied by a*

Remonstrance,—and to the solicitation as to change of residence responded by *retiring towards York*, with his sons *Charles* and *James*.

At York, the King received welcome and reëssuring marks of affection, and promises of support, letters reaching him from nobles and gentry in every part of the island, expressive of sympathy and attachment, and urging him to resist the aggressions of Parliament. Thus encouraged, he assumed a firmer tone, and *emphatically refused to sanction the Militia Bill*.

(From this point, the rupture may be regarded as complete.)

Parliament next agreed to a

Resolution for putting the Country in a Posture of Defence, (March 2), and, after the unsuccessful attempt, by *Charles*, on Hull, passed, without asking the Royal Assent, an

Ordinance for carrying into effect the Militia Bill, (May 5),—by which there was conferred upon the Lieutenants named by the House the command of all the

military force, garrisons, and forts, of the kingdom. This measure was approved of by the Peers, also.

In answer to this decidedly un-Constitutional step, *the King issued*

Proclamations,—declaring it a usurpation, and, also, summoned the gentry of the county to form a guard for him, which step Parliament, in its turn, denounced.

The *Commons*, then, *framed*, and sent to the King, (June), an

Ultimatum,—making the following

Demands:—

1. Parliament to have the

(1). Approval of new Peers, and the King's Council, ministers, and judges, (the last two to hold office during life).

(2). Regulation of the education and the marriage of the Royal children.

(3). Control of the Militia, and appointment of commanders of forts and garrisons.

2. No act of the King's to be valid without consent and seal of the Council.

3. The laws against Papists to be put in force,—Popish Peers to lose their votes,—and children of Papists to be brought up Protestants.

4. Church government, and the Liturgy, to be reformed, as Parliament should advise.

5. The justice of Parliament to pass on all "Delinquents".

6. A general pardon, with such exceptions as Parliament should make, to be passed.

The King, as was to be expected, refused compliance with these proposals: had he consented, he would have been, virtually, surrendering the whole of his power to Parliament, who, in their natural anxiety to prevent the slightest exercise of tyranny or injustice, themselves made unjust and tyrannical demands.

Soon after raising his standard, *Charles made an unsuccessful effort to treat with Parliament, (see under "Civil War.")* During the winter of

1642-1643:—

Negotiations marked the early months, their scene being Oxford, the Royal head-quarters, whither commis-

sioners were sent by Parliament. Charles demanded the complete restoration and establishment of his power and prerogative; and Parliament, chiefly, the abolition of Episcopacy, and the control of the Militia,—and beyond these demands, irreconcilable and obstinately adhered to, the treating did not proceed, for *Parliament*, realizing the unlikelihood of an understanding, *recalled their representatives*.

(The *negotiations*, this year, *between the English, and the Scotch*, Parliament, &c., are narrated under "*Scotch Affairs*.")

1644:—

Charles, yielding to the persuasions of those of his followers who were attached to Constitutional usages, *summoned a*

COUNTER PARLIAMENT, AT OXFORD, (Jan.-April),—consisting of 45 peers, (a greater number than that sitting in the Lords' Chamber at Westminster), and 118 Commoners, (not half the number of the Lower House of the "Long Parliament"). Its proceedings, which included the levy, (in imitation of the action of the Westminster Parliament), of an

Excise,—on beer, wine, and other commodities, (the proceeds to go to the King), were of no great importance, and it was *dissolved as useless*.

From March to November, went on

Laud's Trial,—(for particulars, see sketch of his life under "*Celebrated Persons*"), issuing in his condemnation by an

Ordinance of Attainder,—after being found innocent by his Peers, the conduct of the Commons in this affair being the greatest blot upon the Long Parliament, and equal in "tyrannical abuse of power" to any one of Charles's arbitrary acts. In

1645:—

Laud's Execution took place, Jan. 10. Three weeks after,

Negotiations between the belligerents were again opened, at *Uxbridge*, the Parliament, at the request of the King, sending Commissioners thither. The subjects of debate were

1. *Religion*,—Parliament demanding the *Establishment of Presbyterianism and the Directory*, and the signing, by

the *King*, (and his people), of the Solemn League and Covenant.

2. *The Militia*,—the Houses insisting on having command thereof.

3. *The state of Ireland*.

Charles was willing to make some concessions, but the demands in *re* 1 and 2 were intolerable to him, and, after 21 days' fruitless discussion over them, *Parliament withdrew their representatives*.

The most remarkable act of Parliament during this year was *the passing of the Self-Denying Ordinance*. In the Parliamentary party, the Independents, "who had, at first, taken shelter, and concealed themselves, under the wings of the Presbyterians," had recently "evidently appeared a distinct party," with "different views and pretensions," its political principles being more pronounced and advanced, including, as regarded the civil strife then going on, the demolition of the Throne, a length to which the Presbyterians were not prepared to go. The natural result of this difference was animosity and dispute, in the House and the camp. The Presbyterians were in a majority in the former, but the Independents, who could boast as their leaders Cromwell, Sir Harry Vane, Oliver St. John, (Solicitor-General), and Nathaniel Fiennes, were superior in debating power, sagacity, and political address, and managed, thus, to carry their measures, amongst which the most important was the re-modelling of the army, the offspring of the subtle brain of Cromwell, who saw in it the instrument by which his party should obtain control of the army, and, consequently, of the Parliament, and, so, gain its cherished ends,—and by which, moulded to his purpose, and attached to him by strongest ties, he should be able to carry out his own profound schemes of ambition.

There had, for some time, been bickerings amongst the commanders belonging to the two sects, *Cromwell and his fellows* accusing Essex and the other leaders appointed by Parliament of incompetency and dilatoriness, and the murmurers, now, in pursuit of their designs, openly, *in the House*, gave utterance to their condemnation of the conduct of the late campaign, Cromwell particularly charging Manchester with having refused him permission to attack the Royal army, when in retreat, after the battle of Newbury, and, thus, (as he alleged), losing an excellent oppor-

tunity of ending the war. Manchester, however, neatly retaliated by informing the House that, at another time, Cromwell, insisting upon some scheme which the former had suggested that Parliament would not carry, had said, "My lord ! if you will stick firm to honest men, you shall find yourself at the head of an army which shall give law both to King and Parliament."

Recriminatory debates went on for some time, but the Independent faction dared not openly propose the removal of Essex, Warwick, and the other leaders whom they desired to supersede, because of the popularity and esteem enjoyed by them, especially by the first-named. They, therefore, determined to proceed in an indirect, but not the less sure, way. Accordingly, at Cromwell's instance, a committee was appointed to draw up the celebrated

Self-denying Ordinance,—*excluding all, save a few specially named, Members of Parliament, from holding any civil or military office conferred by either House.*

The measure passed the Commons after severe debate ; while the Peers, whose order it more nearly concerned, rejected it once, but, then, passed it, under great pressure from the Lower Chamber, **Ap. 3.**

As the result, Essex, (who received a pension of £10,000), Warwick, Manchester, Denbigh, Waller, Brereton, and others, resigned their commissions, retiring with the thanks of Parliament.

The next step in the scheme of Cromwell and Co. was the reconstruction of the army, on the

New Model, as approved by both Houses, (and described under "Civil War.")

During this year, the *anger and distrust of Parliament* against Charles were *greatly aggravated* by the *discovery*, amongst the Royal baggage taken at Naseby, of *papers and copies of letters*, (chiefly to the Queen), *revealing the profoundest treachery and deceit* on Charles's part, shewing, as they did, that he had intrigued with the Irish rebels, and endeavoured to obtain the aid of foreign princes against his people,—and that the concessions which he had offered had all been in bad faith. The effect of these discoveries was heightened by that of the articles of a treaty, just concluded, with the Irish rebels, (*see "Irish Affairs."*) A selection of the documents was published under the title, "*The King's Cabinet Opened*," causing no small sensation.

In consequence, mainly, of these discoveries, Parliament, (in which his implacable foes, the Independents, had been much strengthened, by the accession of new members, recently elected in place of those who had gone over to the Royal party), treated roughly and coldly several attempts at negotiation, by Charles, in the course of the winter, receiving his messages, (desiring a passport for commissioners to treat of peace), at first, with contemptuous silence, and, then, replying by bitterly reproaching him for the bloodshed of the Civil War, and declaring that they were preparing for him bills, his acceptance of which would be the best proof of his sincere desire for peace, (this being, in effect, a demand that he should yield at discretion !)

At the same time, to justify their conduct, they published the Irish Treaty, which excited fierce indignation in the breasts of the patriotic portion of the people. The King, then, asked for a personal treaty, and offered to come to London, if Parliament would grant a safe-conduct to him and his suite: they, however, sent back a refusal to admit him, and issued orders for "guarding," (meaning "seizing"), him, should he adventure the attempt.

Under these circumstances, when, in

1646:—

Fairfax, with a victorious and overwhelming force, approached Oxford, where the King lay, the only safe course open to the latter appeared to be to refuge with the Scotch army, to which he was encouraged, moreover, by the considerations that the Scots, having had all their demands met, had no further concessions to ask him,—that they were, in consequence of the preponderance of the Independent party, and the lessened respect for the Covenant, therein, disgusted with the Parliament,—and that they would be tolerably certain, with their proverbial loyalty, to open their arms to receive and protect their distressed sovereign.

Thus decided, Charles left Oxford, by the gate leading towards London, on the night of April 26, accompanied by only Dr. Hudson, and Mr. Ashburnham, riding, as the latter's servant, before a portmanteau. Turning, when beyond the city, to the North, he arrived at the Scotch before Newark, May 5.

The Scotch General and Commissioners received him

with all due deference, but it became speedily manifest to him that he was regarded as a prisoner, for, under pretence of protection, a guard was set upon him, and when he attempted to give them the password, Leven interposed, saying, "Sire! I am the older soldier; your Majesty had better leave that office to me!"

Information of Charles's arrival was at once sent from Newark, with an assurance that no treaty had been entered into with him, to the English Parliament, who at once passed a vote declaring their sole right to his person, which becoming known to them, the Scots broke up *their camp*, and, with the King in their charge, *retired to Newcastle*, on the way back to their country, should it be necessary to take such a step to preserve their prey from being torn from their grasp, against their wishes.

They now insisted upon Charles's issuing orders to his garrisons to surrender to the Parliament,—and urged him to sign, and induce his people to sign, the Covenant, employing an able divine, Henderson, to urge this upon him: he, however, firmly refused.

In July, came

Proposals to Charles, from Parliament, the main demands being that he should

1. Adopt the Covenant, (the proposals being drawn up by the Presbyterian majority).
2. Abolish Episcopacy.
3. Surrender the command of the military and naval forces, and all forts, to Parliament, for 20 years.
4. Allow Parliament to levy money at will for the support of their armies.
5. Consent to a general amnesty, excluding, however, 70 of his followers.

To these proposals, a decided answer was demanded within 10 days.

Charles did not refuse to entertain the terms, and, even, expressed himself ready and willing to give up control of the army, &c., for 10 years,—but he asked to be allowed to go to London, there to treat, a request which was denied, whereupon the negotiations fell through.

The Parliament and the Scots now commenced treating for the delivery of the King up to the former, and the bargain was finally struck, (Octr.), on condition that the Scots, (who agreed, also, to return home when the

first half should have been paid), should receive £400,000, in satisfaction of all claims for their services, one half to be paid in ready money, the rest, in two equal sums, within two years.

In accordance with this agreement, when it had been ratified by the Scotch Parliament, in order to strengthen peace between the two kingdoms, and £200,000 having been handed over to the Scotch,

In 1647:—

Charles was delivered up to English commissioners, Jan. 30, and conducted, under guard, to the residence prescribed by Parliament, Holmby House, (Northampton), the populace flocking forth, as he passed, to gaze upon him.

During Charles's stay at Newcastle, Essex, the ex-generalissimo of the Parliamentary army, died. He had retained most of his influence, after his compelled resignation, being the mainstay of the Presbyterian party, which, in consequence of his decease, now found itself seriously weakened in the Commons, while the Peers lost the small residuum, or appearance, of power which they had till now retained, and "were, in a manner, wholly extinguished."

At Holmby, Charles was treated very harshly, his old servants being dismissed, all intercourse with family and friends rigorously prohibited, and even his chaplains not allowed to wait upon him, because they had not signed the Covenant!

Parliament, that is, the Presbyterian majority in Parliament, was now in ecstasies, which, however, were but ephemeral, for within three days after the King's arrival at his new quarters they adopted a measure which issued speedily in their own downfall. Seeing everything reduced to obedience, they, jealous of, and dreading the army, which they knew sympathized with the Independent party, determined to bring the forces under easy control, and, to this end, passed a

Resolution for Disbanding all the Army,—excepting a strong detachment for reducing Ireland, and such a force as might be needed for garrison duty.

This blow, had it fallen, would have proved ruinous to the Independents generally, and fatal to Cromwell's ambitious schemes, especially. But the army, skilfully manipulated by the latter and his fellow-leaders, frustrated it.

There was due, at the time, to the majority of them, from Parliament, no less than a year's pay, about which the Resolution said nothing, whence the men naturally concluded that once they should be drafted to Ireland, or garrisoned, or disbanded, their enemies, (the Presbyterians in Parliament), would defraud them. They were, also, disgusted at the prospect of Irish service, then a great bugbear. From these two causes, but mainly the former, general discontent infected the ranks, and showed itself in paucity of enlistments for Ireland, mutinous combinations, and an imperious

Remonstrance to Parliament,—who, in this extremity, adopted the foolish step of sending to head-quarters, at Saffron Walden, (Essex), Skippon, Cromwell, Ireton, and Fleetwood, (the last three being actually the instigators of the commotions), empowered to enquire into the cause of the army's "*distempers*," and make such conciliations as might appear good and right. The commissioners, of course, only fomented the discontent and disorder. At their suggestion, there were chosen a

Council of Officers, holding commissions, and a second **Council of "Adjutors,"** (afterwards nicknamed "**Agitators**"), consisting of two men, non-commissioned officers, or privates, from each troop or company,—to enquire into the discontents. On meeting, they voted first that they found no "*distempers*," but abundant "*grievances*," in the army, and, then, that the offer of the Parliament was unsatisfactory.

Having, thus, defied the latter, the Councils at once proceeded to deal a crushing stroke at the enemy, in the *seizure of the Royal person*. Appearing at *Holmby*, suddenly, with 500 horse, Cornet Joyce, ex-tailor and prominent "adjutor," entered the King's presence, pistols in hand, and told him he must prepare to set out for the army, to which Charles replied by appointing to meet him at the door at 6 the next morning, appearing at which hour, he found the troopers drawn up, and, on enquiring several times for the Cornet's authority, was, by the latter, referred to them, "tall, handsome, and well-accountred." The monarch, smiling, replied that the warrant was "written in fair characters, legible without spelling," and gave himself up, whereupon, he was *conducted*, June 4, with all respect, to

the army, then pressing to the rendezvous at Triplow Heath, (near Cambridge).

The Presbyterian party were thunderstruck at this daring blow—so sudden and undreamed-of that Fairfax himself was ignorant of its being contemplated,—and, discovering that the leading members of the army councils were in Cromwell's interest, determined to seize the latter, on his coming to the House. Forewarned, however, he hastened to, and put himself under the protection of, the forces, who, by acclamation, at once made him commander of themselves and their general-in-chief.

At once, *Cromwell* marched upon the Parliament, arriving, in a few days, at St. Alban's. But London, mainly Presbyterian in proclivities, sided with the Commons majority, and the City militia, recently placed in trustworthy hands, was called out to guard the lines which had been constructed round the Metropolis, against the King, during the War. At the same time, orders were sent to the army not to advance, but were unheeded. As the forces approached, the House altered its tone, and, in a spirit of submission, caused to be erased from its Journal the vote declaring the remonstrants in the late disorders public enemies,—a concession which only encouraged the army to fresh demands, amongst which the most daring was for the impeachment of Massey, Hollis, Maynard, Stapleton, and seven other members who had been prominent in the proceedings against the forces. These 11 withdrew on the arrival of *the army at Uxbridge*, (June 26), and the leaders of the latter were *induced*, for the sake of appearances, *to withdraw to Reading*, whither they carried *with them the King*, who had, from the time of his seizure by Joyce, enjoyed much greater liberty than when in the custody of the Scots, being allowed to see his friends, correspond with the Queen, and have his chaplains, with unmolested use of the Liturgy,—and was, here, permitted to have his children with him for a few days. At this period, indeed, it seemed as though good fortune were about to return to him, for the leaders of all parties assiduously courted him, the heads of the army, especially, proposing to replace him on the Throne, on conditions far from unfavorable, which, however, he, to the surprise of his friends, haughtily and firmly refused, believing that, in the sequel, the struggle between the army and Parliament

would enable him to give laws to both. In this he was grievously mistaken, *a crisis, issuing in the triumph of the forces*, being speedily brought about by the violent action of the Londoners.

Parliament having, at the instance of the military leaders, *voted that the Militia should be changed*, the Presbyterian commissioners therewith dismissed, and the command given to those who had held it during the War, the citizens protested, in a petition, which was carried to the Commons accompanied by an immense crowd of apprentices and others, who behaved so violently and menacingly as to compel the House to negative its late vote.

When news of this reached Reading, the *heads of the military* at once *ordered an advance to London*, to vindicate, (as they put it), the privileges of Parliament. On the way, the most favorable incident possible under the circumstances occurred.—The forces being drawn up on Hounslow Heath, 20,000 strong, suddenly there appeared on the scene the Speakers of the Houses, (Manchester, and Lenthal), attended by 8 peers, and about 60 members of the Commons, with the maces and other insignia, and, indignantly recounting the violent treatment they had received, asked the protection and aid of the army. Shouts of acclaim were the response, and the leaders, rejoiced at such an excellent and *apropos* pretext for consummating their desires, hastened Londonwards, to reinstate and vindicate the quasi-liberty of the outraged Houses.

The Army entered the Metropolis, Aug. 6, and, marching through the streets, unmolested, with the greatest propriety and assumed moderation, reached Westminster, and, there, reinstalled the Speakers.

No sooner was Parliament thus restored than the Lord Mayor, one of the Sheriffs, three Aldermen, and several citizens, and officers of the City Militia, were committed to custody, as scape-goats for the mob,—while, at the demand of the army, the 11 impeached Commoners were expelled, 7 *Peers were impeached*, and every act of Parliament, from the day of the late tumult till that of the restoration of the Speakers, was declared null and void. By these last measures, vainly opposed by the Presbyterian party, *Parliament became the mere tool and slave of the military leaders*.

These matters being settled, a Day of Thanksgiving for

the restoration of liberty (!) was appointed, and the heads of the army, having secured their supremacy over Parliament and City, *Charles was brought to Hampton Court*, where his late comparative liberty was, at first, continued to him.

Parliament now, again, entered upon negotiations with him, being instigated thereto by the officers, of whom Cromwell and Ireton, especially, seem, at this juncture to have wished to save him. The discovery, however, that he was intriguing with the Scots, and the suspicions of treachery excited in the army against them by the "Levellers", made Cromwell, and the others willing to spare him, to withdraw their countenance from the King, and cause him to be more closely guarded and kept.

Alarmed at this sudden severity, and at the sanguinary threats of the "Levellers", *Charles* determined to escape, and, accordingly, with only three attendants, he *quitted Hampton Court*, secretly, Novr. 11, leaving, in his room, letters to the Parliament, the General, and the officer who had attended him. Travelling all night, he reached Titchfield, a seat of the Earl of Southampton, where the Dowager received him warmly. Thence he crossed to the *Isle of Wight*, whose governor, Colonel Hammond, nephew to the King's favorite chaplain, he hoped would aid him to leave the country, in which, however, he was disappointed, since that officer, while receiving him with loyalty and respect, detained him, in Carisbrook Castle, a virtual prisoner, though but slightly guarded.

At this juncture, *Cromwell* found himself compelled to *put down*, with a strong arm, the

"Levellers,"—a party, (originating in the disorders which he and other officers had raised), who desired not only the abolition of royalty and aristocracy, but, also, perfect equality amongst the elect, maintaining that the meanest common soldier, if enlightened by the Spirit, was on a level with the most exalted commander. In order to put down this pestilent faction; Cromwell, first, issued orders to discontinue the meetings of the "Agitators." The "Levellers," however, disobeyed, continuing their assemblies in secret, and declaring that the officers needed reformation as much as either State or Church.

Realizing the necessity for a stern and short work with

the brood, Oliver, taking advantage of the men being drawn up, under review, at Ware, arrested the ringleaders,—held a Council of War on the field,—and shot one of the mutineers, which decided measures so terrified the malcontents that they instantly returned to their obedience and duty.

While engaged in reducing this disorder, Cromwell learned that the general feeling in the army was in favor of *bringing Charles to trial*, and he and his associates seem soon after to have accepted the same opinion. It was *first openly mooted*, at a secret

Council of Officers, at Windsor,—called, at Ireton's suggestion, by Cromwell, to deliberate upon the settlement of national affairs, and of the King's future.

Charles had offered, soon after reaching the Isle of Wight, to resign to Parliament the control of the militia, and appointment to the great offices, during his life, on condition of these reverting to the crown, after his death.

Parliament, ignoring the offer, framed, and sent to the King, for his approval, the

Basis of a Treaty,—of which the terms were

1. *Parliament* to have control of the military power for 20 years.
2. Charles to revoke all denunciatory proclamations against Parliament.
3. All peer-patents conferred since the King had left London to be null.
4. Parliament to adjourn when they might think fit.

These terms were conveyed to Charles, Decr. 24, by English, accompanied by Scotch, Commissioners, the latter having been sent by the Scotch, to the English, Parliament, (who, with the nation at large, were opposed to the proceedings against Charles, and were, also, deeply indignant at the contempt which the Independents showed for the Covenant, which they termed "an almanac out of date"), to protest against the propositions to be laid before him. In

1648:—

Charles entered into secret negotiations, and concluded a private

Treaty with the Scotch Commissioners,—of which the following were the

Terms:—

1. The Scotch army to reëstablish Charles on the Throne.

2. Charles to confirm Presbyterianism in England for three years, and, then, to settle the Constitution of the Church in conjunction with the Assembly of Divines, and Parliament.

It was arranged, also, that the Cavaliers should take arms to help the Scots, while Monro should bring over the Scotch Royalists then in Ireland.

Buoyed up with hopes of the great things this Scotch alliance should accomplish for him, *Charles rejected the proposals of the English Parliament, and, the same day, attempted, but in vain, to escape from Carisbrook Castle.*

Parliament, on receiving his refusal, and discovering its reason, passed a

Vote of Non-Address, Jan. 13,—by which it was resolved that

1. No more addresses should be made to, or letters received from, the King.

2. Anyone holding intercourse with him, without consent of both Houses, should render himself liable to the penalty of high treason.

By this document, *Charles was, virtually, dethroned, and the Constitution overturned.*

At the same time, in consequence of the King's attempted escape, Hammond received orders from the army to remove all the Royal servants, inhibit correspondence between the captive sovereign and his friends, and render his confinement closer.

Soon after these events, the so-called "*Second Civil War*" commenced, (*for particulars see "Civil War"*), commencing promisingly for Charles, but ending disastrously for him.

During its progress, Cromwell and the other leading Independents being away in the field, the *Presbyterian party recovered the ascendant, and, at once, proceeded to undo the work which, under pressure, it had recently completed. They passed a*

Resolution repealing the Vote of Non-Address, and determined to reëpen negotiations with Charles, to which end they despatched to the I. of Wight 15 Commissioners, (5 Peers, and 10 Commons), who, on their King's

appearance before them, were horrified to see the miserable change wrought in his appearance, his hair, and beard, (which he had, since the dismissal of his servants, allowed to grow), being grey and dishevelled, his eyes sunken, his face pallid wrinkled and haggard, his form bent, and his voice broken.

The terms they offered were much the same as those previously presented to him, and the obstacle in the way of agreement proved chiefly religious, he refusing to take or sanction the Covenant, to abolish Episcopacy for longer than three years, or alienate the Bishop's lands, while he insisted upon amnesty for all. He consented to yield control of the militia for the period asked.

The negotiations were, (unwisely on the part of the Parliament), spun out until the "Second Civil War" was all but over, and the *Independent leaders* were at leisure to undo what the opposite faction had accomplished.

Their first step was to *send to the Parliament a*

Remonstrance,—*framed by a council of general officers*, the foremost of whom were Ireton and Ludlow,—complaining of the late measures *in re* Charles, and demanding the dissolution of the present House, and the punishment of the King for the bloodshed of the late War. Of this measure Fairfax disapproved, but had not courage to oppose it.

The Presbyterians, however, led by Hollis, a Cromwell in determination, stood firm, and even proposed to proclaim the generals and other chief officers traitors, for their disobedience and usurpations.

The army leaders, however, were not to be daunted, and proceeded to march, under the name of Fairfax, the forces to London, to carry out their designs, while they caused the King to be removed to safer custody, in Hurst Castle, (Nov. 30).

Parliament, unmoved, proceeded to consider the late negotiations with Charles, and, after a hot debate of three days, *carried*, by 129 to 83, in the Commons, a

Resolution that the King's Concessions formed a sufficient basis whereon Parliament should proceed to settle the Kingdom, (Decr. 5).

But the Independent leaders were more than a match for their opponents in skill and daring, and, at once, proceeded to administer "checkmate" in the struggle, by means of Colonel

"Pride's Purge," (Decr. 6).—At the hour for the assembling of the Commons, Colonel Pride, (ex-drayman), surrounded the House with three regiments, and, under the orders of Lord Grey, of Groby, seized in the passage 52 Presbyterian Members, whom he sent to a low room, nicknamed "Hell," whence they were conveyed to various neighbouring inns,—and prevented the rest of the faction, (about 50 more), from entering. Only the Independent Members, about 50 in number, were allowed to take their seats, they forming the celebrated

"RUMP" PARLIAMENT,—Decr. 6, 1648—April 20, 1653.

Cromwell, at this juncture, was on his way from Scotland, where he had been quelling the movement in Charles's favor, but, on his return, heartily approved of what his fellow-officers had done, and took a prominent part in the further proceedings of the party.

The Rump's first acts were to

1. *Reverse the vote for treating with the King,* and declare his concessions to be unsatisfactory.

2. *Pass a new vote of "Non-Address."*

3. *Commit to prison a number of the Presbyterians.*

The nation was, naturally, plunged into alarm and anxiety, by these violent steps. To allay this popular feeling, the *Generals issued*, in the name of the army, a

Declaration,—that they would maintain law and order; while the *Council of Officers discussed* a scheme which they termed an

"Agreement of the People,"—and which was a plan of a republic, in place of the now virtually defunct monarchy.

To carry out this plan, the trial and death of Charles were necessary.

Accordingly, a

Committee was appointed to frame a charge against the King, Decr. 23.

The day before, he had been brought from Hurst Castle to St. James's, and was, now, taken to Windsor. In

1649:—

The Committee presented their report, Jan. 1, which declared "that Charles Stuart, for accomplishing of his designs, and for the protecting of himself and his adherents in his and their wicked practices, to the same ends hath

traitorously and maliciously levied war against the present parliament and the people therein represented." Thereupon, the Commons passed a

Vote adopting the Report, and appointing a High Court of Justice to try the King.

The Peers, however, (though mustering but 12 strong), *negatived this vote*, and adjourned for 10 days, hoping that, meantime, something would occur to check the *Lower House*. The latter, bent on accomplishing their purpose, *replied by a*

Declaration, (Jan. 4), that the people are the origin of all just power, that the Commons are the supreme authority of the nation, and that, consequently, whatever is by them enacted has the force of law, whether the Sovereign and Peers consent or not thereto.

Immediately upon this, the

Ordinance for the Trial of the King by a High Court of Justice was re-read and reëgreed to, unanimously, Jan. 6.

Harrison, a violent partizan, was, then, despatched to fetch Charles to London, to be ready for trial.

He arrived at St. James's Jan. 19, and the next day commenced, in Westminster Hall, the famous

Trial of the King, Jan. 20-27,—before a Court consisting nominally of 135 Commissioners, (including Cromwell, Ireton, Harrison, Robert Lilburne, Colonel Hutchinson and Bradshaw, a Serjeant-at-Law, who acted as *President*). Of these members, however, (named by the Commons, and consisting of officers, and members of the Commons of the dominant party; a few Peers, and a number of London citizens), not more than 70 sat on any one day of the trial. The Judges had been placed on the roll, but their names were struck off, in consequence of their declaring it to be contrary to the laws of England to try the King for treason. Fairfax, too, was on the list, but, when his name was called, a voice from one of the boxes was heard, crying, "He has more wit than to be here."

The Court being formed, Cook, appointed, by the Commons, solicitor for the people, read the

Charge,—which, made "in the name of the people of

England," was to the same effect as that included in the *Committee's Report* of Jan. 1.

When the words "in the name," &c., were being read, the same voice as before interrupted with "Not a tenth part of them," whereat, Axtell, the officer in charge of the Court, gave orders to fire into the box, which led to the discovery that the bold speaker was Lady Fairfax.

The accusation having been read, Charles, (who, throughout this, and the succeeding, trying scene, behaved with truly regal dignity, and manly courage), called upon for his answer, repudiated the authority of the Court, as not consisting of his equals, (declaring himself, as Divinely-appointed King of England, superior to all the power of State),—and refused to submit to it. After three distinct, unavailing, efforts to induce him to acknowledge the Court, and plead, the

Trial commenced by the examination of numerous witnesses, who swore to having seen Charles in arms against the Parliamentary forces. This proved, the Court passed, and the Clerk read out, the

Sentence,—adjudging him, "*as a tyrant, traitor, and public enemy to the good people of this nation, to be put to death by severing his head from his body.*"

The execution being fixed for the third day after the trial, the King spent the interval quietly and calmly, chiefly in religious exercises. On the 29th, he had a last interview with the only two of his family remaining in England,—his son Henry, and his daughter Elizabeth.

On the morning of the fatal day, at 10 o'clock, he was conducted, on foot, from St. James's to Whitehall, (this palace being chosen as the scene of execution "to display more evidently the triumph of popular justice over royal majesty"), and, at 2, was led out, through an aperture in the wall, upon the scaffold, which was erected opposite the central window of the Banqueting Hall.

Finding himself so surrounded with soldiers that he could not make himself heard by the multitude beyond, the King addressed himself to those on the scaffold, declaring that for his sins his life was forfeit to his Maker, and that he was now to be punished, especially for his having consented formerly to an unjust condemnation, (i.e., *Strafford's*); but asserting his innocence of what he was accused of,—that Parliament alone was responsible

for the Civil War, and its results,—that *he came there a martyr for the people, because he would not assent to arbitrary sway (!)*,—and that the country would not again be happy till his son had his due. He, then, at the instigation of Juxon, the Bishop of London, (who had ministered to him throughout the interval since his condemnation, and had accompanied him upon the scaffold), protested that he died in the faith and communion of the Church of England, and added, “I have on my side a good cause and a merciful God.” Juxon replied, “Sire! you have but one stage more! it is turbulent and troublesome, but short: it will carry you from earth to heaven.” “I go,” returned Charles, “from a corruptible to an incorruptible crown.” “You exchange,” the Bishop rejoined, “an earthly for an eternal crown—a good exchange!”

The King, then, took off his cloak, gave his George to Juxon, with the never-explained injunction, “Remember!” laid his head, without trepidation, upon the block, and, after a brief interval, signed that he was ready, by extending his hands,—whereupon the executioner, (who, with his assistant, was masked, and whose identity has never been clearly established, some holding it to have been Cromwell), severed the head from the body at one blow, his coadjutor holding it up, ghastly and gore-dripping, to the people, with the customary cry, “Behold the head of a traitor.” A deep and angry groan burst from the multitude, who pushed wildly forward towards the scaffold, but were promptly dispersed by the soldiery.

Thus perished Charles—by the hands of a small, but daring, minority, who by military force had usurped the supremacy in the State—a martyr to his own folly and obstinacy. His execution was illegal, and unconstitutional,—a judicial murder. He had been guilty of the gravest offences against the liberties of the country, but, (according to our wise political maxim, “the King can do no wrong”), ministers, not the sovereign, are responsible for the latter’s political misdeeds. Moreover, as he justly pleaded, neither the Court that condemned him, nor any other, had the slightest jurisdiction over him.

The act was, moreover, as foolish as it was illegal, for not only had the Independent party, by giving him on his trial the opportunity of displaying those qualities which irresistibly call forth the admiration and love of mankind,

so contrived their revenge that the King actually seemed to die a martyr to the cause of those liberties "he had outraged," but, also, there was left an heir, and he at liberty, to whom the allegiance of every Royalist was at once transferred, so that, "to kill the individual was," in this case, "not to destroy, but to release the King."

ECCLESIASTICAL AFFAIRS.

Primates.—Abbot ; Laud ; none from 1645 to 1660.

On his accession, *Charles gave his confidence*, (as his father had done in his last years), to the *Arminian, or High Church, party*, headed by Laud, whom he made his chief ecclesiastical adviser.

The leaders of this sect taught the Divine right of Kings, and the duty of passive obedience to them,—and leaned considerably towards Popery, holding the Episcopal Supremacy of the Pope, and the Real Presence, and favoring a gorgeous and sensuous ritual.

The preference thus shewn by Charles, together with the concession to the Papists, by the marriage treaty between him and, first the Infanta, then Henrietta Maria, of permission to exercise their worship in private, and of exemption from taking oaths inconsistent therewith, caused much alarm and excitement, and greatly swelled the ranks of the Puritans and Nonconformists, numbers of the clergy going over thereto.

The result of the predominance of the Arminians in the Church was soon seen in the shape of *Popish innovations*—new forms and ceremonies being introduced, candles adorning the altars and images of saints in the churches, and the Eucharist being declared a sacrifice. These measures still further strengthened the antagonistic party, and originated the

Doctrinal Puritans, who, while opposing these innovations, as contrary to the *doctrines* of the Reformation, did not object to forms.

Laud and his party strenuously supported Charles in his unconstitutional measures, repaying him thus for his tolerance of their vagaries. (A strong proof of their sympathy with him was afterwards afforded in Convocation, upon the dissolution of the "Short Parliament," voting him a large grant, and passing canons insisting on the Divine right).

Those who opposed the novelties introduced by the Ritualists were severely punished by the arbitrary Court of High Commission,—e.g.—

1. SMART, a Durham canon, for censuring, *inter alia*, the placing of images and pictures in churches, was *fined* £500, and *imprisoned*, till released by the "Long Parliament."

2. WORKMAN, a Gloucester clergyman, was *incarcerated*, for a like offence. Being released, he opened a school: Laud closed it, whereupon the poor martyr commenced practice as a doctor, but was again inhibited by the implacable prelate, and, shortly after, went mad, and died.

As these persecutions multiplied, numbers of the Puritans embarked for America, until, the stream of emigration swelling portentously, Charles put a stop thereto by a

Proclamation,—*forbidding any to leave for the New World* that could not produce a certificate, from their minister, of conformity to the Church.

Cromwell, amongst others, had arranged to exile himself, but was, with his companions, prevented by order of the King, who must, often afterwards, have wished heartily that he had not hindered his doughty foe from expatriating himself!

The Puritan party in Parliament were not slow to give utterance to their sentiments concerning the objectionable doings in the Church. Their complaints became very energetic after the recess of 1628, being directed against Charles's patronizing the Arminians, and appointing Laud Bishop of London,—and against the style of the sermons preached in the High Church pulpits, Cromwell, in his first Parliamentary effort, accusing Dr. Alabaster of Papist utterances at Paul's Cross, and his Bishop of inciting him thereto. The issue of the debates on these charges was one of the "Resolutions," (see "*Parliamentary Affairs*"), declaring any one introducing Popery, Arminianism, or any other change of religion, a capital enemy to his country.

*During the years Charles ruled without a Parliament, the Arminian party retained his favor, and grew mightily in power, while the King, at their instigation, and with their support, committed the grossest outrages on the popular religious sentiments, (see "*Parliamentary Affairs*").*

Of these, the re-sanction of the "*Book of Sports*" was

the grossest. On the part of the High Church party it was intended as both an insulting blow at the opposite faction, and a bid for popularity.

(Charles's efforts to thrust Episcopacy on the Scotch, and their consequences, are narrated under "Scotch Affairs").

The "*Short Parliament*," immediately on meeting, proceeded to consider, *inter alia*, the abuses of the High Commission Court, and innovations in religion, but, owing to its sudden dissolution, accomplished no reforms in these directions.

The "*Long Parliament*," however, adopted sweeping and radical measures affecting the Church, viz.,—

1. The reversal of sentences passed by the High Commission Court,—and, thereafter, its total abolition.

2. The Impeachment, (and subsequent execution), of Laud.

3. The declaration of "Delinquents," (including the Bishops and clergy), who had voted in the last Convocation.

4. The "zealous measures" detailed under, (and to be here inserted from), "*Parliamentary Affairs*."

(Charles's visit to Scotland, as far as it related to religious matters, must be here narrated, from "Scotch Affairs").

The news of the outbreak of the Irish Rebellion greatly increased the exasperation of the Puritan majority in Parliament against the Papists, and the High Church party, their deadly animosity being displayed in their ascribing, in the "*Remonstrance on the State of the Kingdom*," all the King's errors and abuses to the influence of a Papist faction, which, they asserted, had ever swayed, and begged him now to dismiss from, his councils.

After the passing of this document, the Commons caused violent and inflammatory sermons to be preached against Papists and malignants, thereby directing the popular rage against the Arminian prelates, who were, in consequence, mobbed, (see, also, for their Impeachment, and exclusion from Parliament, "*Parliamentary Affairs*").

During the years of Arminian ascendancy, a desire naturally grew up, amongst the Puritans, for a reformed ecclesiastical system, in place of Episcopacy: owing to the close association with Scotland, the form of change desired by the majority in the Parliament was Presbyterianism; and, it having been determined to promote uniformity of

worship in England and Scotland, by establishing this system in the former country, the Commons summoned together the celebrated

Westminster Assembly of Divines, June 1643,—consisting of 120 clergy, (chiefly Presbyterians), and 30 lay assessors, Peers and Commoners. It met in Henry VII.'s Chapel, Westminster, and *drew up* a

Directory of Public Worship,—to be used instead of the Book of Common Prayer, (which Parliament inhibited),—giving great freedom in prayer and preaching. It produced, also, the

“**Assembly's Catechism**”—“**Longer,**” and “**Shorter,**”—a

“**Confession of Faith,**” (not completed till 1646),—and a **Form of Presbyterian Government,**—declaring the system to be of Divine institution, and giving the ecclesiastical courts the right to put down private assemblies for worship, and exercise a censorship of the Press.

This Form, however, owing to the opposition of the Independents, did not pass into law. The Assembly's other works, however, are still retained, as their guides, by the Presbyterian body.

In the autumn of 1643, the English Parliament, by signing the “**Covenant,**” bound itself to the extirpation of Popery, prelacy, superstition, heresy, schism, and profaneness,—and, by implication, to the establishment of Presbyterianism.

The gradual growth, under the ægis of this latter system, of the

Independents,—has been already alluded to, and their political principles, and progress to and arrival at preëminence under the able leadership of Cromwell and others, have been sketched. It is necessary to describe briefly their principles of Church order, which were no less liberal than their tenets as to government. They held, (as their successors still hold), that

1. Believers should voluntarily assemble for religious worship, &c., and that each society so assembling is properly a Christian church.

2. Every Christian church should elect its own officers, manage its own affairs, and stand independent of, and irresponsible to, all authority save that of the Supreme Head of the Church—CHRIST,—and that the only appeal in matters of faith and practice is to the Scriptures.

3. The power of a Christian church is purely spiritual, and should in no way be corrupted by union with temporal or civil power.

As the natural outcome of these principles, the Independent sect was the most tolerant of all: Popery, and prelacy, alone, were treated by them with severity.

Parliament passed a

Bill Abolishing the Offices of Archbishop and Bishop, 1646.

Laud's great engine of oppression, the

High Commission Court,—was founded on a clause in the Act of Supremacy, 1559, empowering the Queen to appoint commissioners, clerical or lay, to enforce the measure. In consequence, several commissions were issued, but it was not till 1583, when a new and more arbitrary one was appointed, that the Court was *fully established*.

It consisted of 44 members, (12 of whom were bishops), 3 forming a quorum,—*had jurisdiction over the whole kingdom*, and all orders, though directed specially against the clergy,—*took cognizance of all errors, heresies, and schisms*,—non-attendance at church; publication of sedition; slander; and immorality,—*tried cases without juries*, and had the power of examining suspects by an oath called "*ex officio*," whereby they were bound to answer all questions, however incriminatory,—and *punished by fines, imprisonment, and excommunication*.

The Court became, naturally, a formidable instrument of tyranny for the Crown and the hierarchy. The Courts of Law, it is true, did not recognise it, and, frequently, in the reign of Elizabeth, placed prohibitions on its acts. Under the Stuarts, however, the judges having grown more servile, the High Commission was entirely free from control, and became so infamously unjust, cruel, and oppressive, that the *Long Parliament abolished it*, (as narrated under "**Parliamentary Affairs**").

Two cases, illustrative of the harsh proceedings of this scandalous chamber have been already given: to them may be added that of the *Bishop of Lincoln*, who was *fined £10,000 for slandering Laud!*

VARIOUS AFFAIRS.

The

Court of Star Chamber,—took its title from the Star Chamber, (*Camera Stellata*), a room, (itself named on account of its roof being decorated with stars), in Westminster Palace, wherein the Court used originally to meet.

It dates back to remote antiquity, having been originally composed of the King's Ordinary Council, and exercising jurisdiction in civil and criminal causes.

Under Edward III., it had become extremely oppressive, and numerous statutes curbing it were passed, time after time, its power, thus, gradually declining until the time of the Tudors, when

Henry VII. erected, on its ruins, a

New Court, which may be considered a kind of Committee of the ancient Court of Star Chamber—consisting of the Chancellor, the Treasurer, and the Privy Seal, (Henry VIII. adding the President of the Council), as judges; and a bishop, a temporal peer, and the two Chief, (or, in their absence, two other), Justices, as assistants,—designed, mainly, to restrain and punish illegal combinations, (e.g., the giving of liveries); the partiality of sheriffs in summoning juries; taking of money by fines; riots; and unlawful assemblies,—and having power to punish offenders as if they had been convicted in the regular course of law.

Towards the end of the reign of Henry VIII., the jurisdiction of the old

Star Chamber Court was revived, the Court of Henry VII. being gradually merged in it,—the judges being the Lord Chancellor, or Lord Keeper, as President; the Treasurer, the Privy Seal, and the President of the Council, with whom were associated the Members of the Council, and all Peers who chose to attend: under the Stuarts, however, only those of the latter who were Privy Councillors seemed to have been summoned to sit, while the Bishops ceased to attend.

The civil jurisdiction of the Chamber was gradually transferred to the ordinary Law Courts: it was its *criminal jurisdiction* that rendered it so powerful and hateful.

It took cognizance of "Maintenance;" perjury; forgery; riot; fraud; libel; and conspiracy,—and, generally, of all

misdeemeanors, especially of a public kind, which could not be brought under the ordinary operation of the Law.

The regular mode of procedure was, on information at the suit of the Attorney-General, or, frequently, of a private individual,—by witnesses, whose depositions were taken down, previously, and read in court. Often, however, *the process was summary, the accused being examined privately, (sometimes by torture), and sentenced without formal trial, on their own confession.*

Any sentence short of death might be inflicted, the usual punishments being fines, (frequently ruinously heavy), and imprisonment, to which, towards the last, were added the pillory, whipping, and mutilation.

Under Charles and his father, especially the former, this odious Chamber became insufferably tyrannical and offensive, as a means of asserting the Royal prerogative: it even exercised illegal control over the ordinary Courts of Justice. The following are *specimens of its proceedings under Charles*:—

1. LEIGHTON, a Scotch minister, wrote, in 1630, a work called "*Zion's Plea against Prelacy*," in which he denounced Episcopacy, and said some sharp things about the Queen, who was a zealous Papist. He was fined £10,000,—whipped and pilloried,—had his ears cut off, his nose slit, and his cheeks branded "*S.S.*" (= "*Sower of Sedition*"),—was expelled the Church,—and sentenced to life-imprisonment, but was released by the Long Parliament.

2. PRYNNE, a Puritan barrister, of Lincoln's Inn, wrote, in 1633, an unwieldy quarto, called "*Histrio-Mastix*," in opposition to the stage and various sports. As the King and Queen sanctioned these amusements, and the latter had, herself, acted at a Court performance, it was pretended that the book was meant for a libel on Royalty. Prynne was fined £5000,—pilloried, at Westminster and Cheapside, with loss of an ear in each place,—struck off the University and Inns of Court rolls,—and sentenced to life-imprisonment. While in jail, he managed to publish "*Notes from Ipswich*," a tract against the Bishops, for which he was further sentenced.

3. BASTWICK, a physician, and BURTON, a clergyman, for publishing similar tracts, were similarly treated.

SCOTCH AFFAIRS.

Sketch of Affairs from James I.'s Death to 1640:—

It had been James I.'s policy to bring the Reformed Church of Scotland into conformity with the Anglican Church, by engrafting the system of the latter upon the former, and he had partly accomplished his design, by the "Articles of Perth," causing thereby, however, disgust and alienation amongst the inferior clergy, and the people generally, who detested prelacy, regarding it and Popery as one and the same.

Charles came to the Throne bent upon perfecting his father's plan, and speedily shewed his leaning, by elevating to the highest state dignity, *viz.*, that of "*Lords of the Articles*," eight of the Scotch prelates, thus deepening the animosity against himself, especially amongst the powerful nobility, who, naturally, regarded these episcopal *parvenus* with jealous eyes.

The King, with Laud, paid a visit to Scotland 1633, to be crowned, but made no attempt to carry out his scheme, being deterred therefrom by the popular feeling displayed in consequence of the introduction, by Laud, at the Coronation, of a high altar, candles, and genuflexions.

Nevertheless, the obstinate monarch held to his purpose, and, on his return to England, caused *Canons and a Liturgy*, (the former imposing prelatical Government, and the latter differing from that of the Anglican Church only in being more Popish), to be prepared for the Church of Scotland, (though he was not by law the head thereof).

Sunday, July 23, 1637, being appointed for the first reading of the new Liturgy, the churches were the scene of wildest riot, *the people*, who had learned the character of it, tumultuously refusing to listen to the new service, and maltreating the clergy, (including the Dean and Bishop, in St. Giles's, Edinburgh), who attempted to read it. Riots of a serious character ensued.

Charles, on hearing of the reception of his pet scheme, instead of wisely withdrawing it, remained inflexible, merely issuing a

Proclamation,—pardoning the rioters, but exhorting the people to receive the Liturgy obediently and peaceably, to which the reply was a public

Protestation,—presented by Lords Hume and Lyndesey, this being the *first appearance of any of the nobility in open opposition* ! This proved the *crisis*, the smouldering insurrection at once bursting into flame. At Edinburgh, the patriots formed four committees, termed the

“**Four Tables**,”—representing, respectively, the nobility, gentry, Presbyterian clergy, and burgesses,—which *assumed the entire government, provisionally*, being generally obeyed with alacrity. They at once drew up the celebrated

“**National Covenant**,”—which was speedily subscribed by nearly every one in the country : it was preceded by a renunciation of Popery, signed, in his youth, by James I., and bound all setting hand to it in a solemn common engagement to

1. Resist every innovation in religion, (i.e., in Presbyterianism).

2. Stand to the defence of the King, his person and authority, and of each other, in preservation of the religion, liberties, and laws, of the Kingdom.

Charles, now thoroughly alarmed, *sent* the Marquis of Hamilton to *treat*, on the basis of the Covenant being renounced, which was stoutly refused, whereupon the King, (with his usual duplicity and want of wise decision), offered, successively, to give up the Liturgy and Canons,—abolish High Commission,—and, even, curtail the Bishops' power considerably. These offers, however, came short of the demands, and, by displaying Charles's weakness, encouraged the malcontents to bolder and decisive measures. Accordingly, they proceeded to elect a

General Assembly,—which met, at Glasgow, Nov. 1638, and, encouraged by Argyle, and other nobles,

1. Declared the Kirk independent of the Civil Power.

2. *Abolished Episcopacy*, the Liturgy, the Ordinal, the Canons, and High Commission.

3. Ordered everyone, under pain of excommunication, to sign the Covenant.

The Marquis of Hamilton had, in Charles's name, in vain, ordered the Assembly to disperse, and, now, the King, equally in vain, *issued* a

Proclamation,—annulling the measures passed.

It became evident, now, that the sword must be appealed to, and, accordingly, both sides prepared for the contest.

The Scotch, with the sympathies of England covertly on their side, and with the material assistance, in men and money, of France, to encourage them, enlisted and drilled enthusiastically, (Argyle taking the command of the new levies), and very shortly all the country, save a small part which loyal Huntly held, was in an excellent state of defence, while an army, about 20,000 strong, under Alexander Leslie, (a veteran of the German wars), *crossed the Border, and advanced to near Berwick.* Charles, on the other hand, had a large fleet, with 5,000 troops on board, which, under Hamilton, was to sail up the Firth of Forth to create a diversion,—while an army of 20,000 foot and 3,000 horse, under the Earl of Arundel, was hastily raised, and marched north, the King, after summoning all the Peers to attend him, joining it. With this showy, but militarily weak, force he *marched to Berwick*, where, finding that he could not depend upon his men, owing to their sympathies being with the Scotch, he determined upon conciliation, and, accordingly, hinted to the Scots that an accommodation was possible. They, being quite willing to avoid a contest, accepted the hint, and, after short negotiations, the King and the Scots, respectively, signed the

Pacification of Berwick, June, 1639.

Articles:—

1. The Royal fleet and army to be withdrawn, and the Scotch forces disbanded, within 48 hours.
2. The King's authority to be restored.
3. A General Assembly, and a (Scotch) Parliament, to meet for the settlement of all matters in dispute.

The *Assembly* met, and, at once, abrogated the Canons, Liturgy, and High Commission,—and *abolished Episcopacy.* Charles signified his consent to these measures, but, when the *Parliament* assembled, and commenced to take steps to limit the *Royal prerogative*, the King, acting on the advice of Strafford and Laud, prorogued its sittings, and determined to again take up arms.

Affairs from 1640 to 1649:—

Charles had been compelled, by necessity, to disband his army, after the "Pacification," and found himself, now, called upon to raise another, while he was utterly without resources to equip and support it. To provide the where-

withal, he called the "Short Parliament," which, however, (*as related under "Parliamentary Affairs"*), failed to meet his wishes, and was, accordingly, abruptly dissolved.

By various illegal means, he, then, succeeded in fitting out 19,000 foot and 2,000 horse, but, meanwhile, the *Scotch* leaders, (having, when disbanding their troops, wisely instructed them to hold themselves prepared for speedy reëmbodiment), had, with ease, assembled over 20,000 sturdy and determined Covenanters, and, now, on hearing of the dissolution of Parliament, *marched them across the Border*, declaring, earnestly and persistently, that their sole object was to obtain audience of the King, and lay their petition at his feet.

Entering England in August, they encountered a hostile force, 4,500 strong, posted, by Wentworth, to oppose their crossing the Tyne, in the *battle of*

Newburn-on-Tyne, (Northumberland), **August 28, 1640.**—*Scots victorious.*

Scots com.—General Alexander Leslie.

English com.—Lord Edward Conway.

The invaders, before assailing his forces, begged Conway to retire, and let them have free course to the Royal presence, and, being refused, attacked with irresistible energy, killing a large number of the enemy, and driving the rest from the field.

They, then, pushed on to, and *took possession of,*

Newcastle,—which was *evacuated by the English*, whom Wentworth led back to Northampton, whither *Charles* had come. Finding the Scots still advanced, the King, with his army, *retired to York.*

Here, *messengers from the Scots came to propose negotiations*, adopting a tone of hearty and humble loyalty, and of almost apology for their late success in battle. Consenting to treat, Charles summoned, at York, (*as related under "Parliamentary Affairs"*), a Council of Peers, by whose advice he appointed 16 Peers as *commissioners* on his own side, to meet 8 *Covenanting deputies*, at Ripon.

Meanwhile, (*as narrated under "Parliamentary Affairs"*), the "Long Parliament" was summoned. Before they met, however, the Council had come to *temporary terms* with the Scots, *by the*

Treaty of Ripon, Oct. 26, 1640.

Articles:—

1. Hostilities to at once cease.
2. The matters in dispute to be settled in London.
3. The Scotch army to remain in England, and receive £5,600 weekly, to maintain it, until the negotiation should be ended.

The "Long Parliament," (*see* "*Parliamentary Affairs*"), kept the *Scotch army* in England, paying for their support, for twelve months, at the end of which time a

Pacification,—was concluded.

Main Articles:—

1. The Scotch and English armies to disband.
2. The Scots to receive £800,000, as "friendly assistance and relief" (!)

It, also, declared that the Scots had ever been good subjects, and had, laudably, undertaken their military expedition solely for the King's advantage and honor.

The armies were disbanded August, 1641, and Charles, (*as related under* "*Parliamentary Affairs*"), went to Scotland, where he displayed the utmost complaisance,—his concessions extending to the elevation of several Covenanters to the Privy Council,—devout and assiduous conformity with the *Established Church*,—and, on Parliament meeting consent to

1. The late abolition of *Episcopacy*, and

2. A Triennial Bill.

Unfortunately, however, for him, any favourable influence which this line of conduct might have produced was considerably marred by an intrigue called the

"Incident."—The Earl of Montrose, imprisoned by the Covenanters, for plotting against them, wrote to Charles, offering to prove that Hamilton and Argyle had carried on treasonable correspondence with some of the leaders of the English Parliament, and suggesting that they should be arrested,—and assassinated, if they should resist.

The two accused, with Hamilton's brother, Lanark, forewarned, withdrew into the country.

Charles complained of the insult thus offered him,—and Parliament declared the noblemen justified in acting as they had done, though they acquitted the King of all blame.

On the breaking out of the Irish Rebellion, 1641, the Scots sent a small body to the support of their compatriots in Ulster.

During the first year of the Civil War, Scotland remained neutral. But the national sympathies were strongly against the King, and, as the strife progressed, there took possession of the people an impatient longing to be aiding in the contest against tyranny, over the Border, and a solemn conviction of its being their duty so to assist, under pain of incurring the curse pronounced against Meroz, (who "came not to the help of the Lord against the mighty"). The conduct of Charles, in refusing, at this juncture, to call a Scotch Parliament, greatly swelled the current of hostility to him.

The English Parliament had, from the first, looked wistfully beyond the Tweed, and, when the reverses of 1643 crowded upon their cause, determined to seek a Scotch offensive alliance. Accordingly, with a view to achieving this end,

Sir Harry Vane, and 3 other commissioners, were despatched to Scotland to negotiate.

In consequence of Charles's refusal to assemble a Parliament, the "*Conservators of the Peace*," (officials recently instituted), called, on their own authority, but in the King's name, a

Convention of States,—with which the Commissioners, after much treating, skilfully conducted by Vane on his side, *drew up*, for approval of the English Parliament, the celebrated

Solemn League and Covenant, 1643.

Articles :—

1. The subscribers to

- (1). Defend one another mutually against all opponents.
- (2). Endeavour to root out Popery, Prelacy, superstition, heresy, schism, and profaneness,—the English Church to be amended according to the Scriptures and the best reformed models.
- (3). Maintain the rights and privileges of parliaments, together with the Royal authority.
- (4). Discover, and bring to justice, all incendiaries and malignants.

2. The Scotch to supply 21,000 troops to aid the Parliamentarians.

3. Parliament to pay £31,000 monthly to maintain the troops.

The English *Parliament* subscribed the Covenant, **Sept. 25**, and ordered all in office to do the same,—£100,000 were despatched over the Border,—and, by the end of the year, a *Scotch army*, 20,000 numerous, consisting partly of troops recalled from Ireland, *marched into England, early in 1644*, thereby turning the scale against the King, in the

CIVIL WAR,—their share in which, *in England*, in **1644**,—*vis.*, *attacking Newcastle; being blockaded in Sunderland; joining Fairfax, and, with him, besieging York, fighting Marston Moor, and taking York*, must be here narrated from "**Civil War.**")

In Scotland:—

It seemed for some time as though Charles's tottering cause were to be restored and made triumphant by the efforts of the loyal and heroic young Marquis of Montrose, (James Graham), who, with a small force of compatriots, strengthened by a few troops from Ireland, proved a red-hot thunderbolt to the Covenanters. In

1644:—

The first gleam of promise was afforded, by the issue of the *battle of*

Tippermuir, (Perth), **Sept. 1**,—*Royalists victorious.*

R. com.,—**Marquis of Montrose.**

P. "—**Lord Elcho.**

By this victory, **Montrose obtained possession of**

Aberdeen, (*defended by Lord Burleigh*), which was given up to the sack for three days, during which the most horrible cruelties were perpetrated, especially by the Irish mercenaries, who compelled their victims to strip before being butchered, that their blood might not spoil their clothes for "loot." In

1645:—

Montrose won the battles of

Inverlochy, (Inverness), **Feb. 2.**

P. com.—**Marquis of Argyle,—**

Auldearn, (Inverness), May 9.

P. com.—General Hurry,—

Alford, (Aberdeen), July 2.

P. com.—General Baillie,—and

Kilsyth, (Stirling), Aug. 19.

P. com.—General Baillie.

In this severe engagement, 5,000 Covenanters fell, on the field and in the pursuit, while they lost all their artillery and stores. The victory made the Marquis master of Scotland, Glasgow, Edinburgh, and the other important towns lying at his mercy.

Numbers of "trimming" nobles now declared on the Royal side, and *Charles's power seemed completely re-established.* But this prospect was speedily blighted, and his cause across the Border ruined, by the consequences of the very battle which seemed to have ensured its triumph.

No sooner was the Kilsyth plunder divided, than most of the Highland clans returned home, with their shares, thus fatally reducing Montrose's numbers, while the accession of fresh supporters was more than counterbalanced by jealousies which issued in the withdrawal of many from the Royalist ranks, which, thus reduced and disorganized, were surprised by 4,000 horse, suddenly crossing the Tweed, and compelled to fight, at every disadvantage, the *battle of*

Philiphaugh, (near Selkirk), Sept. 13.—*Parliament victorious.*

P. com.—General David Leslie.

R. com.—Marquis of Montrose,

who, with a few followers, escaped: all the rest were slain, or captured, and *Charles's cause in Scotland wholly collapsed.*

In England, in

1645:—

The Scotch army took

Carlisle,—after a stubborn resistance, and, advancing West, besieged

Hereford, which Charles relieved.

They, thence, retired to, and made their head-quarters at, **Newark,** where *the King gave himself up to them,* (which event, and their subsequent delivery of him to the Parliament, are narrated under "Parliamentary Affairs").

Upon the arrangement being effected, the Scotch contingent returned home, and was disbanded.

From the moment that the Independents began to get the upper hand in Parliament, the Scotch, who were nothing if not Presbyterians, commenced to veer round towards Charles. (Their *disgust at the Independents' treatment of the Covenant*, and the *sending Commissioners on behalf of the King to the Parliament*, and the *Treaty made by these with Charles*, are narrated under "Parliamentary, &c., Affairs").

The Scots Parliament readily voted the *Duke of Hamilton* 40,000 men, for the support of the King's authority, and called a large body of troops from Ulster, where Monro commanded. The Duke professed that all these measures were taken in defence of the Covenant, but, meanwhile, he was in correspondence with the Royalist leaders in the N. of England, and *arranged*, with them, an *invasion of England*, and, accordingly, crossed the Border and entered upon the

CIVIL WAR RENEWED, 1648.—(the events of which, *In England*,—must be supplied from "Civil War.")
In Scotland:—

Cromwell invaded the country, with a numerous force, after the surrender of Hamilton, and, *joining Argyle*, who was, also, in arms, *reduced the rising*.

The two, then, *proceeded to suppress the moderate Presbyterians*, placing the power in the hands of their own party, and visiting severely all who had taken part in "*Hamilton's Engagement*." Having, thus, spent two months, Cromwell returned to England.

The *Trial and Execution of Charles* were eminently unpopular with the Scots, who warmly *protested against* the proceedings, but in vain.

IRISH AFFAIRS.

The Period was rendered terribly memorable in Ireland by the

GREAT REBELLION, 1641:—

Origin.—*Popular discontent at*

1. The *Colonization, under James I., of the lands of Ulster* and other parts, forfeited by rebellion, by English and Scotch adventurers, (mostly Protestants).

2. The *penal laws* in force against *Romanists*, (of whom the bulk of the population consisted).

3. The *mis-government* of *Strafford*, who had defrauded Royal grantees, (after paying for their grants),—declared the lands of Connaught forfeited, on pretence that they belonged to the Crown,—allowed no one to leave the Island without his licence,—established mighty monopolies for his own advantage,—imposed arbitrary taxes, and levied them by military force,—imposed the *Articles* on the Irish Church,—and set up the authority of the executive over the Law Courts.

Leaders.—Roger More, (an Irishman celebrated for bravery and ability); Sir Phelim O'Neill, (the representative of the Tyrone family); and Lord Maguire.

Object.—To massacre, and expel, the *English*,—and establish an *independent Romish state*, under the protectorship of Spain.

Strafford had raised the army in Ireland from 3,000 to 12,000 men, (with the secret purpose of employing them for Charles's benefit in England), and, thereby, had been able to keep the people in subjection. But Parliament had insisted on reducing the force to its original dimensions, the result of which rash step was to greatly weaken the English grasp of the country, and to turn loose on it a large body of men, mostly Papists, familiar with the use of arms.

The old Irish, seeing their opportunity, and encouraged by the successful efforts of English and of Scots to obtain redress of grievances, took advantage of the state of things in their own country and the distracted condition of England to raise the standard of revolt.

The approach of winter having been fixed upon for the commencement of the revolt, (so that the difficulty of transporting troops might be augmented), the insurgents began by a *surprise attack* on

Dublin Castle, Oct. 23, 1641,—which *failed*, owing to betrayal of the plan.

Meanwhile, *O'Neil* and his *confederates* set up the standard of *rebellion* in *Ulster*, and, immediately, were joined wholesale by their fellow-countrymen.

The insurgents confined themselves, at first, to seizing the estates, houses, cattle, and other property, of the settlers, in

this province. When, however, they had stripped their victims thus, they, under the direction of their leaders and the priests, embarked upon one of the most horrible massacres in history, immense numbers of the wretched "heretics," man, woman, and child, being, variously, burned, (numbers in the ruins of their own houses), buried alive, and drowned, while others were stripped of their clothes, and turned naked out of doors, amidst unusually rigorous cold and severe tempest.

The English of Ulster being totally annihilated, the *Rebellion rapidly spread* through the other divisions. The bloodshed therein was comparatively light, but the barbarities exercised rivalled those in the North.

The old English settlers, "of the Pale," (who were Romanists), seem, at first, not to have been in the secret, for they censured the rebels, professed abhorrence of their atrocities, and induced the magistrates to give them arms for the avowed purpose of supporting the Government. Soon, however, their religious overcame their political sympathies and convictions,—they joined the insurgents, taking Lord Gormanstone as leader, and, speedily, became worthy rivals in brutality of the old Irish.

The *total* of those who *perished* in all the provinces is estimated at from 50,000 to 200,000, the former being the number given by Clarendon, who would not over-do his calculation.

Only the holding out of Dublin Castle preserved the English name in the Island.

The news of the outbreak was given to the Commons, Nov. 1, by a committee of the Lords. Charles, who was in Scotland, finding the Scots unable to do more than send a small guard for their compatriots in Ulster, felt himself obliged, in this strait, to resort to Parliament. (*Insert here, from "Parliamentary, &c., Affairs," his message, and the feelings and course of conduct of the Commons at this juncture*).

Regarding the charge that *the King* instigated, or, at least, connived at, the Rebellion, it seems pretty clear, from documentary evidence, that he was aware of the existence, long before the outbreak, of a revolutionary attempt being in contemplation,—and that he "*wished* to turn this feeling to his own purposes, by causing an *armed demonstration in Ireland, against the English Parliament.*"

It is strongly significant that *he*, on hearing of the rising, wrote to his Secretary ; "*I hope this ill-news of Ireland will hinder some of these follies in England.*"

Large bodies of *troops*, English and Scotch, were *sent over* from time to time, *to put down the rising*, but with no result, the Romanists remaining in arms, and even forming a

Confederation, 1642,—to give unity to their acts. At the same time, they professed the utmost loyalty to Charles.

By the exertions of the Marquis of Ormond, Lord-Lieutenant, and Commander-in-Chief of the forces in the Island, the Irish Council and magistrates were gradually enlisted on the side of the King, so that when the

English Parliament sent Commissioners over to conduct the affairs of the Kingdom, they were excluded from the Council.

In 1643, there being about 50,000 troops under his orders, Ormond, acting on *private instructions from Charles*, agreed to an

Armistice with the Rebels, Sept. 13,—whereby he was enabled to send over to his master's aid several Anglo-Irish regiments, (*whose share in the ensuing contest must be here narrated, from "Civil War"*).

In 1645, "*the State of Ireland*" formed Article III. of those *propounded* at the fruitless negotiation at *Uxbridge*.

Later on, in the same year, occurred the battle of Naseby, and the consequent capture of the King's private papers, with their fatal evidence against Charles, (*see "Parliamentary, &c. Affairs"*).

In Ireland, the same year, a *secret Treaty with the Rebels* was concluded.—Charles, now in extremities, being anxious to have over to his assistance all the troops remaining in the island, instructed Ormond to promise the insurgents the repeal of all penal laws against Papists,—and, at the same time, as they might demand further concessions which could not be made openly, he gave a *private commission to the Earl of Glamorgan*, to levy men, and coin money and employ the Crown revenues for their support,—and promised to ratify any treaty that nobleman might make, even if contrary to Law. But, to enable him, if necessary, to disclaim it, (which he, presently, actually

did), the King caused the document to be drawn out informally.

In consonance with his instructions, Glamorgan concluded a

Secret Treaty of Peace with the Rebels,—amongst the stipulations being an understanding that they should retain all the churches they had held since the commencement of the War, on condition of assisting Charles with 10,000 men!

A copy of this precious document fell into the hands of the English forces, being *taken* with the baggage of the titular Archbishop of Tuam, who was killed in a *sortie* of the garrison of *Sligo*.

It was immediately published everywhere in Ireland, and copies sent to England, (*its effects* in which country are given under "**Parliamentary, &c., Affairs**").

Not only did Charles repudiate the Treaty, but, to keep up appearances, Glamorgan was actually thrown into prison, though soon released.

Upon his surrender to the Scots, the King sent orders to Ormond to submit (if he could not defend himself), to the Parliament, rather than to the Papists, which he, being in dire extremity, was nothing loath to do. Accordingly, he *delivered up*

Dublin, Drogheda, Dundalk, and other garrisons, to Colonel Jones, English commander, and himself quitting the Island for England, to eventually join Prince Charles, in France, 1647.

Meanwhile, the Papists, dreading the Parliament, and disgusted with the indiscretion and insolence of Rinuccini, the Nuncio, saw that their only safe resource lay in supporting Charles's cause. Earl Clanricarde formed a secret

Combination amongst the Romanists,—drove the Nuncio from the Island,—and invited Ormond to return, and reassume the Government.

The latter consented, and came back, 1648,—and, immediately, *concluded a*

Treaty with the Papists:—

Articles:—

1. The King to

(1). Grant full freedom of worship.

(2.) Redress all grievances of religion and trade.

(3.) Establish the independence of the Irish Government.

2. The Irish to support an army of 17,500.

The army was raised,—and, the Parliament, (occupied at home with the anxieties of the final struggle with the King's party), totally neglecting their interests in Ireland, Ormond readily *reduced*

Dundalk, Drogheda, and other garrisons, and *threatened* Jones, in

Dublin,—which, with Londonderry, was the only stronghold left the Parliamentarians in the Island. At the moment of Charles's execution, it seemed very probable that Ireland would be lost to England.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS.

France.
LOUIS XIII.
LOUIS XIV.

Germany.
FERDINAND II.
FERDINAND III.

Spain.
PHILIP IV.

Popes.
URBAN VIII. INNOCENT X.

THE COMMONWEALTH.

Dates.—Jan. 30, 1649-1660, May 29.

The history of the Commonwealth consists of *three periods* :—

1. From Charles I.'s Execution to the appointment of Cromwell as Lord Protector, 1649-1653.

2. Oliver Cromwell's Protectorate, 1653-1658.

3. From Cromwell's Death to the Restoration, 1658-1660.

[*It is not, however, desirable to follow this division in the ensuing pages : it will be easy for the student who masters them to narrate separately, if required, the events, (general, or special), of either of the three epochs.*]

During the Period termed the "*Commonwealth*" Charles II. was, *de jure*, King, his regnal years being, according to the Judges, dateable from Jany. 30, 1649.

WARS.

1. THE CIVIL WAR, 1642-1651.

1. In England.—*Details* have been given under, (and must be here narrated from), "*Scotch Affairs*," because it was mainly confined to, or connected with, Scotland.

2. In Scotland,—see "*Scotch Affairs*".

3. In Ireland,—see "*Irish Affairs*".

2. WITH THE DUTCH, 1652-1654.

Origin:—*Jealousy between the two countries, as maritime nations.*

Events leading to War.—The Dutch democratic party having, upon the death of William of Orange, the Stadtholder, 1650, succeeded in establishing a Republic, the *English Parliament* projected a collision between the two states, for mutual security and advantage, and, to effect this, sent over, as envoys, St. John, (the Chief-Justice), and Strickland.

The *Dutch*, hitherto almost omnipotent at sea, who regarded the increase of English commerce with jealous dislike, *treated with cold indifference the overtures* of the Commonwealth, offering only to renew the former alliances with England. Besides this treatment, the *envoys were insulted*, by the Orange faction and the populace generally, and *Royalist refugees* were allowed to remain in *Holland*.

The ambassadors, angered and disgusted, returned home, and, without difficulty, changed the pacific intentions of Parliament to hostile purposes.

To provoke the Low Countries to war, and to injure their commerce, the *Rump* passed the celebrated *Navigation Act*, (which, owing to their mercantile marine being the general carrying medium of Europe, was almost a death-blow at the Dutch commerce),—and granted to certain merchants, who professed grievances, *letters of search and reprisals*, the result of which was the capture of over 80 Dutch ships.

War was now inevitable, but, before it could be declared, hostilities commenced, (as narrated *infra*).

After the first fight between Blake and Van Tromp, the *Dutch* sent their Pensionary, Paw, to demand explanations, and arrange the quarrel, if possible. *Parliament*, however,

bent on war, *refused to listen* to remonstrances, or exchange explanations, simply *demanding*, without conditions, *instant reparation* for the alleged wrongs inflicted by Dutch vessels on English commerce. *This demand* could not, of course, consistently with self-respect, be granted, and *was*, therefore, *disregarded, whereupon*

War was declared against the States-General, July 9, 1652.

Events :—

1652 :—

Previous to the declaration of War,

Hostilities commenced, early in May, by Commodore Young, who *fired on a Dutch vessel*, for not saluting the English flag. Soon after, occurred a *battle*

Off Dover, May 19.—English victorious.

E. coms.—Robert Blake; Captain Bourne.

D. com.—Van Tromp, (one of the bravest and toughest of the old Dutch “sea-dogs.”)

Which was to blame of these two fiery, energetic, chiefs, for the engagement it is hard to say, Van Tromp declaring that stress of weather drove him into Dover Roads, while Blake asserted that, when he signalled to the Dutchman to lower his flag, the latter replied by a broadside.

Tromp had 42 sail, Blake only 15, which were, however, reinforced, after the fight had begun, by 8 more, under Bourne. In spite of his numerical inferiority, Blake maintained the battle for 5 hours, sinking one, and taking another, of the ships of the enemy, who, then, night coming on, made off to the Dutch coast.

After the declaration of War,

Blake, sailing to the N. of Scotland, *drove away the Dutch herring “busses”* which had been, for years, in the habit of fishing in British waters, thereby reaping rich profits. Returning thence, he was met by Van Tromp, with 100 vessels. A fearful storm, however, prevented an engagement, and Tromp returned, pursued by Blake, to Holland, where he met with such unmerited censure for his compelled inaction that he resigned, in disgust, being succeeded by the equally brave and more skilful De Ruyter, who, with 50 ships, convoying 30 merchantmen through the Channel, was encountered by an English squadron, only 40 strong, in *battle*

Off Plymouth, Aug. 16.—*Indecisive.**E. com.*—Sir Geo. Ayseua.*D. "*—De Ruyter.

Night parted the combatants, and next day the Dutchman sheered off, with his convoy, the English being too cut up to follow.

The gallant Hollander, reinforced by a squadron under De Witt, speedily returned, and encountered a nearly equal English force in *battle*

In the Downs, Septr. 28.—*English victorious.**E. coms.*—Blake; Penn; Bourne.*D. "*—De Ruyter; Cornelius De Witt.

The enemy's rear-admiral was boarded and taken, two others were sunk, and one blown up. Evening closed the conflict, and, next morning, the Dutch made all sail home, pursued by the English.

Van Tromp was now restored to the command, and, under his vigorous and determined direction, immense preparations were made for carrying the War to a successful issue. In two months, he was enabled to set sail from Holland with nearly 90 well-manned ships. Blake, on the other hand, owing to disgraceful naval maladministration, could muster but 37 sail, of which nearly all were unsound, and all badly-furnished in every way, while many of the captains were mutinous. Yet he did not hesitate to meet the Dutchman in *battle near*

Goodwin Sands, Novr. 28.—*Dutch victorious.**D. coms.*—Van Tromp; De Ruyter.*E. com.*—Blake.

After 5 hours' gallant resistance, Blake was compelled to retreat, with great loss, and terribly shattered, to the Thames.

Tromp now sailed up and down Channel, unmolested, with a besom at his mast-head to indicate that he had swept the English from the sea.

Meanwhile, the indomitable Blake was vigorously reforming abuses, and refitting the fleet, no less than 80 ships being, by his exertions, at sea early in

1653:—

This fleet, lying in the Channel, was not long in finding the enemy, and giving *battle*

Off Portland, Feb. 18.—*English victorious.*

E. coms.—Blake; General Monk; Dean.

D. „ —Van Tromp; De Ruyter.

Blake was lying off Portland Island when he descried Tromp, with 76 ships, convoying 300 merchantmen up Channel, and, at once, attacked, the result being a *running fight* of three days, lasting till Feb. 20.

This was the fiercest engagement that had taken place during the War, Tromp fighting with magnificent pluck and tenacity, and, finally, making a skilful retreat, with the loss, however, of 11 of his own ships, 30 of the convoy, 2000 slain, and 1500 prisoners; the English had only one vessel sunk, but their whole fleet was greatly shattered, while their slain totalled almost as high as those of the Dutch.

From this point onwards, the War was conducted with "vigor . . unanimity," and success. The next affair of importance was a great *battle*

Off the North Foreland, June 3, and 4.—*English victorious.*

E. coms.—Monk; Dean, (killed, by a chain-shot); Blake, (came up the second day, and decided the fight).

D. com.—Van Tromp.

The enemy lost 19 ships, and 1,300 prisoners: the English suffered very little.

Van Tromp hastened, with his shattered fleet, to the Texel, and was there *blockaded*, by Monk, Blake remaining on shore ill. In a few weeks, the Dutchman had refitted, and made an attempt to break through the English line, thus bringing on a *battle*

Off the Texel, July 29-31.—*English victorious.*

E. coms.—Monk; Penn.

D. com.—Van Tromp; (killed, by a musket-ball through the heart, while, with furious desperation, urging on his men).

The two sides being equal in force, (each having 100 sail), skill, and bravery, the fight was obstinate and protracted, the result being in suspense until Van Tromp received his death-wound: De Ruyter then sheered off towards the Texel, with a loss of 30 ships, sunk or burned, and, (including prisoners), 6,000 men: the English had two vessels destroyed, and 1300 men slain or wounded.

This victory decided the War, the Dutch, overwhelmed

with their disasters and losses, (these including 1200 sail, and amounting, in money, to more than their 20 years' contest with Spain had cost them), eagerly sought to come to terms, and, in consequence, negotiations were opened, and issued in the signing of the offensive and defensive

Treaty of Westminster, April 5, 1654.

Main Articles :—

1. The United Provinces to
 - (1.) Recognize the supremacy of the flag of the British Commonwealth, in the narrow seas.
 - (2.) Restore the Island of Poleron, and pay the East India Company £170,000 compensation for damages.
 - (3.) Pay £3,615 to sufferers, during the War, at Amboyna, and compensate the Baltic merchants, also.
2. Neither of the contracting parties to shelter or aid the enemies of the other.

3. **WITH SPAIN, 1655-1660.**

Origin.—Cromwell's desire to extend the territory and power of England at the expense of Spain, together with, perhaps, strong religious antipathy on his part to the Romish faith, especially that bigoted form of it which obtained in Spain.

Events :—

In 1655 :—

*Before War was declared,
Cromwell required of Spain*

1. A free trade to the W. Indies.
2. The preëmption of Spanish wool for English merchants.
3. A guarantee that English traders should not be molested by the Inquisition.

These demands were, of course, refused, whereupon, on pretence of depredations on the English commerce, a squadron was despatched to the W. Indies, for the purpose of taking

St. Domingo, which was *attacked, unsuccessfully*, with great loss and disgrace, by the commanders, **Admiral Penn**, and **Venables**, (under whom there were 4,000 troops on board). That they might not return without accomplishing anything, the two, then, proceeded to

Jamaica, which important island *surrendered* at discretion, **May, 1655.**—This valuable conquest did not,

however, prevent the Protector from sending both the commanders, on their return, in disgrace, to the Tower, for their failure at Hispaniola.

Upon news of this expedition reaching Europe, Spain declared War,—and proceeded to seize all English ships and merchandize within grasp. Cromwell then concluded an

Alliance with France against Spain, Octr.,

1658:—

Blake, with Montague, made vigorous preparations for hostilities, and, proceeding to Spain, lay off Cadiz, hoping to intercept the treasure ships, until want of water compelled them to sheer off towards Portugal, leaving, however, a squadron of 7 ships, on the coast, under

Captain Stayner, who, Sept. 9, took two galleons of the fleet from Lima, containing treasure to the value of nearly two millions. In

1657:—

The Spanish treasure-fleet, 16 strong, was pursued, by the English admiral-in-chief, to the Canaries. There it sheltered, and was brought to action, in the bay of

Santa Cruz, (Teneriffe), Ap. 20. — English victorious.

E. coms.—Blake; Captain Stayner.

The Spanish galleons were, with a large number of other vessels, moored under shelter of a strong castle and seven forts. With consummate daring, Blake, the wind favoring, sailed right into the crescent-shaped harbour, and, at once, commenced a fierce attack upon the enemy's ships, all of which, at the end of four hours, were on fire, the issue being their total destruction. Marvellously, just as this result was achieved, the wind served to bring the English fleet out of its dangerous position, which Blake successfully accomplished, the whole affair being one of the boldest and most dashing exploits in the annals of our navy. In

1657:—

A second Alliance with France was made, by Cromwell, on condition that Mardyke and Dunkirk should be given him as soon as they should be taken. In

1658:—

The Protector sent an army, 6000 strong, under General

Lockhart, into Flanders, to join the French, under Marshal Turenne. The Allies, then, *formed the siege of*

Dunkirk:—

Allies' coms.—Turenne; Lockhart.

Sp. com.—Marquis of Leyden.

The enemy's marching to relieve the place brought on the *battle of the*

Dunes, June 4.—Allies victorious.

Allies' coms.—Turenne; General Lockhart.

Sp. coms.—Don Juan; Prince of Condé; Duke of York, (Jas. II.).

The defeat was total, and was owing mainly to the valor of Lockhart's "immortal six thousand," most of whose officers fell, in consequence of their heroic daring.

Dunkirk surrendered June 17,—and was, according to agreement, given up to the English, its possession being regarded by Cromwell as a means of obtaining, (with French aid), the partition of the Low Countries.

Furnes, Dixmude, Ypres, Gravelines, Oudenarde, and Menin, now fell, successively, into the hands of the Allies.

The Restoration put an end to this War, as far as England was concerned.

4. MINOR QUARRELS WITH

1. Portugal, 1653.

Origin.—The Portuguese granting shelter to an English fleet which, soon after the execution of Charles I., revolted from the Parliament, and accepted Rupert for commander.

Blake pursued the fleet to the Tagus, wherein it had taken shelter, and, having demanded from the King, and been refused, permission to attack it, treated Portugal as an enemy's country, and inflicted such damage on its shipping that the King was only too glad to negotiate a

Treaty,—agreeing to

1. Repair all injuries done to England.

2. Pay the expenses of the hostilities Blake had engaged in.

2. Tuscany, 1655.

Origin.—The Duke's having allowed some English ships, seized by Rupert, to be sold at Leghorn.

Blake, appearing before the latter place, with the fleet

he afterwards took to Algiers, &c., *compelled the Duke to pay £60,000 reparation to the owners of the sold vessels.*

4. Algiers, Tunis, and Tripoli, 1655.

Origin.—The *piratical attacks* of the Deys of these states upon the *English shipping*.

Blake, with a squadron of 30 ships, fitted out at the same time that Penn's was equipped for the W. Indies, sailed to the Mediterranean. Having determined to put an end to the exploits of the Deys, who were very scourges to that Sea, he sailed first to

Algiers, whose ruler wisely submitted, giving satisfaction for the past, and pledges for the future.—Thence he proceeded to

Tunis,—whose Dey insolently braved him, and, in consequence, had his castles, (Porto Farino, and Goletta), destroyed, and his ships burned, to the great awe and admiration of that part of the world. Lastly,

Tripoli, his fame having preceded him, from Tunis, made terms with the English admiral.

Cromwell interfered on behalf of the

Vaudois, the Protestants of the valleys of Savoy, (1655), who were being cruelly persecuted by the Duke of Savoy. Under his influence, the French Government brought such pressure to bear that *toleration*, and restoration of their ancient privileges, were granted to the sufferers.

Cromwell's foreign policy, (though more meddlesome and high-handed than would suit our day), was "magnanimous, enterprising, and ultimately successful, and, by his firmness and prudence, he made" the English "Government respected" more than it had ever been before, excepting under Elizabeth. "It was his boast," (and a boast which proved true), "that he would render the name of an Englishman as much feared and revered as ever was that of a Roman."

PLOTS, &c.

ROYALIST AND REPUBLICAN CONSPIRACIES, 1654-5,
—the discontent shewn by Parliament encouraging the movements.

All failed, the Protector being forewarned and fore-armed. In connection with one

Plot to assassinate Cromwell, 1654, the

Chiefs—Gerard, and Vowell, were executed.

To punish the Royalists for rising, the Protector, by an Edict in Council, instituted an impost termed

Decimation,—being a tax of one-tenth on Royalist incomes. To levy it, he divided England into 11 jurisdictions, each under a major-general. These officers, aided by commissioners, had power to impose decimation on whom they pleased,—to levy all other taxes,—and to imprison any one whom they suspected of disloyalty to the Commonwealth, there being no appeal from their decisions save to the Protector himself! They were, in fact, absolute masters of the liberty and property of every one in the country.

(The plots against Cromwell's life were countenanced by Charles II., who issued a Proclamation urging the Protector's assassination !)

PLOT TO ASSASSINATE CROMWELL, 1657.

Chiefs.—Colonel Sexby; Miles Syndercombe.

The latter was persuaded by the former, who was on the Continent, to undertake the deed: he was, however, seized,—tried,—found "Guilty" of treason,—and condemned; but was found dead, in bed, the night preceding the day fixed for his execution, (Feb. 13). Sexby was, afterwards, caught, and sent to the Tower.

ROYALIST CONSPIRACY, 1658,—*for a rising in London, and, at the same time, an invasion from Flanders.*

Chiefs.—Marquis of Ormond; Lord Fairfax; Sir W. Waller; Sir Harry Slingsby, (a former conspirator); and Dr. Hewit, a Church clergyman.

Ormond came over to England to join the others in organizing the plot, which assumed a more serious aspect owing to discontent in the army: learning, however, that Cromwell knew of the affair from the first, he fled, in good time.

The movement was firmly and speedily suppressed, numbers being imprisoned, and the more guilty being tried by a specially appointed High Court of Justice. Slingsby, and Hewit, alone, were executed.

At the same time as the preceding, there was a

CONSPIRACY OF "MILLENARIANS" IN THE ARMY,—frustrated by Cromwell's wise measures.

CONSPIRACY OF ROYALISTS, 1659.—

Origin.—The encouragement felt by the Royalists at the dissensions between the Parliament and the Army, on the abdication of Richard Cromwell.

The majority of the party at first engaged in the plot, but, finding that government knew thereof, and was adopting decided precautions, they almost immediately withdrew.

Sir George Booth, however, one of the chiefs, uninformed of the abandonment of the scheme, assembled a body of men, and surprised

Chester, (Aug.)—He was, then, joined by the Earl of Derby, and Lord Herbert, and a momentary ray of success gilded the movement.

Lambert, however, defeated Booth, in the battle of

Nantwich, Aug. 19,—whereupon the whole movement collapsed.

PARLIAMENTARY, &c., AFFAIRS.

1. Before Cromwell's Appointment as Protector :—

Before the execution of Charles I., there had been discussions in Parliament as to the future government of the country. Some had favored the idea of passing by the King's two elder sons, Charles and James, whose principles were fixed, and conferring the Crown upon the Duke of Gloucester, or the Princess Elizabeth; the majority, however, desired a republic, and it was, accordingly, this form which the Commons proceeded to establish, after the execution.

As the first step thereto, there was, immediately, issued a

Proclamation,—declaring it treason to give anyone the title of "King." The Lower Chamber then passed a

Vote abolishing the House of Lords, as "useless and dangerous," Feb. 6, 1649,—whereupon, the few Peers who had continued to sit broke up. The Commons then sanctioned a

Vote abolishing Monarchy, as "unnecessary, burdensome, and dangerous," Feb. 7.

The supreme authority now rested in the "*Rump*," who *proceeded to appoint*, as the Executive, a

Council of State, (Feb. 14), consisting of 41 individuals, including Lords Denbigh, Pembroke, Mulgrave, Salisbury, and Grey; Cromwell, Fairfax, Skippon, Ludlow, and Hutchinson; Bradshaw, (President), Whitelocke, St. John, Vane, Hasilrigge, and John Milton, (Foreign Secretary).

The functions of this Council, (which was appointed for a year only, at the end of which the Commons were, as they promised, to restore the power to the people, from whom they acknowledged to have received it), were the Home Government; the direction of the Army and Navy; the supervision of Trade; and the management of Foreign Affairs.

All public business forms were changed from the King's name to that of the "Keepers of the liberties of England," and a new Great Seal was engraved, bearing the effigy of their House, with the legend, "ON THE FIRST YEAR OF FREEDOM, BY GOD'S BLESSING, RESTORED, 1648."

A few of the excluded members of the Commons were readmitted, and some writs were issued for new elections in places where the House had reason to expect majorities—these two measures being an assumption of legality.

Want of unity soon made itself apparent in the Council.
—Parliament passed a

Vote requiring every Councillor to swear that he approved of all that had been done, at, and after, Charles's execution.—This Cromwell and others cheerfully did: the majority, however, including Fairfax and Vane, refused, whereupon a compromise was come to, the dissentients being allowed to make, instead of the desired oath, a general promise of adherence to the Parliament, and to Government by republic, without King or Peers.

The great support of the Rump was the Army, 50,000 strong, essentially Independent, devoted to, and under the control of, Cromwell, who, from the first, there seems no doubt, foresaw, and was quietly paving the way for, his own absolute rule.

The proceedings of the House were displeasing to the great body of the nation, the Royalists, of course, burning with rage against their ignoble, but triumphant, opponents,—the Presbyterians chafing at the domination of the

Independents,—and the “Levellers,” and other factions in the army, suspecting Cromwell and his party of self-seeking, complaining of the tyranny of the Council, and burning to put their tenets into practice,—and the people generally greening under heavy taxation. To overawe malcontents, Parliament proceeded to the

Trial of the Duke of Hamilton, who had commanded the Scots at Preston,—the **Earl of Holland**, who had endeavoured to raise London against the Parliament, at about the same time,—and the **Earl of Norwich**, (Goring), **Lord Capel**, and **Sir Jno. Owen**, who had surrendered at Colchester. They were arraigned before a High Court of Justice, and found “Guilty” of high treason. Goring and Owen were spared, *Hamilton, Holland, and Capel, executed Mar. 9.*

To coërce the mutinous “Levellers,” a number of their body were sent to the Tower, and one of their leaders, an able, bold, and determined man, named

John Lilburne, was tried, on a new Statute of Treason, *but, after a long trial, acquitted, Octr. 28.*

To meet the expenses of government, a

Revenue was raised from monthly assessments,—an excise on beer, wine, and spirits,—tonnage and poundage ; and fines and compositions, drawn from Royalists and Romanists.

During the hostilities in which Cromwell, and other leaders, were engaged, in the next year or two, a political revolution was being prepared. While they were absent in their commands, a mutual jealousy and mistrust sprang up between the chiefs and the Parliament. On the cessation of war, the latter, to curb the authority of Cromwell, (especially), and his confederates, and bring them under control, passed a

Vote reducing the Army one-fourth,—determining, at the same time, to still further diminish it, in six months’ time.

Cromwell, now, since the battle of Worcester, by general recognition, the first man in the Kingdom, animated by both a sincere desire to promote the country’s liberties, and a purpose to carry out his own scheme of ambition, determined to thwart the Commons. Accordingly, he commenced, from about Sept. 1652. to hold conferences with

the *leading officers*, and with *certain Members* who were attached to him, with the view of bringing about a dissolution of the "Rump," the calling of a new Parliament, and the formation of an executive government, (at the head of which Cromwell was to be), in the meantime. After several months' deliberation, there was *presented*, on their behalf, to the House, early in 1653, a

Remonstrance,—in which—after detailing such grievances as the arrears of pay due to the army, and the disregard shewn by the civil officers for aught but emolument and patronage—they asked Parliament to consider how many years they had been sitting, and whether it was not time for them to summon a new House, which should fairly represent the nation, and establish that popular liberty and equal government which they had so long promised the country.

The Rump received this document with disfavor, and determined not to dissolve, but to increase their number, by recalling, under the new title of "Neuters," the Presbyterians. This prospect was, naturally, most repugnant to Cromwell and his party, since it was easy to foresee that, readmitted, this intolerant body would form a majority which would be used for the forcible establishment of their system. Accordingly, he and his supporters firmly opposed the design, and, finally, obtained from the House, at a

Conference, Ap. 19,—a pledge that they would not proceed with their scheme until they had further communicated with him. The next day, however, *Cromwell*, to his astonishment and rage, learned that they were actually passing a Bill embodying their project, and, with his customary rapid decision, *took instant steps* for the

Dissolution of the Rump, Ap. 20, 1653.—Taking with him 300 musketeers, he hastened to the House, and, posting his men at the door, in the lobby, and on the stairs, entered, in the midst of the debate. Having announced to St. John that the purpose of his coming was to do what vexed him to the soul, and what he had earnestly, but in vain, with tears, sought the Lord not to lay upon him, he sat down, and, for awhile, listened to the discussion. Then, beckoning to him, he told Harrison that he considered Parliament ripe for dissolution. "Sir" said the former, "the work is very great and dangerous ;

I desire you seriously to consider before you engage in it." "You say well," responded he, and again remained quiet for about a quarter of an hour. Suddenly starting up, he vehemently reproached the Members with selfishness, venality, oppression, robbery, neglect of the men who had fought and bled for the country, and truckling, for their own advantage, to the Presbyterians. Sir Peter Wentworth replied that it was the first occasion on which he had listened to such language from one who owed everything to Parliament. Cromwell sprang up,—exclaimed, "Come! come! I'll put an end to your prating,"—paced the floor, several times, in assumed indecision,—and, finally, gave the agreed-upon signal to the troops, by stamping his feet. Five or six files of musketeers entering, he cried out to the Members, "For shame! Get you gone! Give place to honest men—to those who will more faithfully discharge their trust. You are no longer a Parliament; I tell you, you are no longer a Parliament. The Lord has done with you: he has chosen other instruments for carrying on his work." Sir Harry Vane protesting, "This is not honest. Yea! it is against morality and common honesty," was answered, in a loud and angry tone, "O! Sir Harry Vane! Sir Harry Vane! The Lord deliver me from Sir Harry Vane!" Other Members, successively, he stigmatized as adulterers, drunkards, gluttons, and extortioners. Regarding the Mace, lying on the table, he cried, "What shall we do with this bauble? Here," (to a soldier), "take it away!" Finally, addressing the Members, he earnestly declared, "It is you that have forced me upon this. I have sought the Lord night and day that he would rather slay me than put me upon this work." Then he caused the soldiers to clear the Hall,—had the doors locked, putting the key in his pocket,—and went home to his lodgings at Whitehall.

Of the abstract political morality and justice of this daring and decisive act, there can be but one opinion,—*viz.*, that it transcended the boldest of Charles's outrages on Constitutional liberty. "Necessity," however, "has no laws," and, considering the pressing character of the crisis, (apparent to his great mind as it was to none besides), there is ample extenuation for the *fact* of the measure, whatever may be thought of its *manner*.

Thus fell the Rump! "without a struggle or groan, unpitied and unregretted." The country had long been dissatisfied with its proceedings, (though, to its credit it must be said, it had splendidly maintained our national *prestige*), and now, far from his being blamed for the steps he had taken, addresses of congratulation poured in upon Cromwell, from Army, Navy, cities and towns, and, especially, the numerous Independent congregations.

The *supreme power* was now vested in a new

Council of State,—appointed by Cromwell, and consisting of himself, eight officers, and four civilians. It soon became evident, however, from the unsettled condition of the public mind, that some kind of commonwealth must be established: accordingly, the Lord-General and his friends decided upon summoning what was afterwards known as

"BAREBONES'S," (or "THE LITTLE"), "PARLIAMENT," JULY 4-DECE. 13, 1653—consisting of members ("faithful, fearing God, and hating covetousness"), of Congregational churches throughout the Kingdom, who were chosen, by the Council, from lists sent up by the pastors and office-bearers, 128 being selected for England, 5 for Scotland, and 6 for Ireland, of which number 120 took their seats. The Royalist, and other partial, writers, have represented this assembly as consisting, mainly of low, illiterate, fellows, "artificers," (says Clarendon), "of the meanest trades." This is a great error: the majority were good, and a large number—including Viscount Lisle; Montague, (afterwards Earl of Sandwich); Howard, (afterwards Earl of Carlisle); Lockhart, (afterwards French Ambassador); Ashley Cooper, (afterwards Earl of Shaftesbury); Provost Rouse, of Eton; Colonels Hutchinson, and Sydenham; Blake, and Monk,—of high, standing, while nearly all were shrewd, hard-headed, practical, enlightened, and patriotic, politicians, well accustomed and well able to weigh and decide questions of the highest national moment. Amongst the most able of them, was one, Praise-God Barebones, a London currier, and, after him, the assembly was nicknamed "Barebones's Parliament."

Upon this House, Cromwell, professedly, devolved the whole power of government, which they were to retain for 15 months, and, then, be succeeded by an assembly of equal number, chosen by themselves.

Having voted themselves a Parliament, this anomalous,

but able, body proceeded to business. They passed several wise and beneficial measures,—*e.g.*

1. Revised Excise regulations.
2. Abolition of unnecessary offices, and reduction of salaries.
3. Subjection of public accounts to strict scrutiny.
4. Facilitation of land-sales.
5. Liberty of marriage before a civil magistrate only.

They, however, offended the clergy, and lawyers, by directing their attention to Law reform, and Church property and tithes,—displayed an unpopular austerity in matters of religion,—displeased the Army,—and shewed itself not so obsequious as had been expected, by him, to Cromwell, who, with his friends, determined to end the assembly, and place the supreme power in his hands. Accordingly, in a very thin House, Sydenham, one of the members in league with the Lord-General, abruptly proposed the

Dissolution of Barebones's Parliament, (Decr. 13),—and the resignation, by formal deed, of its power into the hands of Cromwell. The Speaker, Rouse, also a Cromwellian, at once left the Chair and the Hall, followed by most of the others present: Colonel White, with a party of soldiers, ejected the rest, and the House was again locked up.

At first, Cromwell refused the offer of the supreme power, but, the document being signed by a pseudo-majority, he, finally, agreed to accept it, and a deed, termed the “Instrument of Government,” (drawn up, it is supposed, by Lambert and a council of officers), embodied the new Constitution. This being privately arranged, Cromwell went, in procession, to Westminster Hall, and, there, was published, the

Instrument of Government, Decr. 16, 1653.

Articles :—

1. Cromwell to be called “Lord Protector of the Commonwealth,”—enjoy that office during life,—and have a successor appointed, by the Council, immediately on his decease.

2. The legislative power to be vested in Cromwell, and a Parliament,—the latter to consist of 400 Members for England, and 30 each for Scotland and Ireland ; and to be

summoned, at least, every three years, and sit, at least, five months consecutively,—all bills passed by the House to be presented to the Protector for his assent, but to become law without that consent, if the latter were not given within 20 days,—and the Protector, subject to the consent of the House, to have the appointment of the great offices of State, and the control of the Army and Navy.

3. The executive to be vested in Cromwell, aided by a Council, to consist of not more than 21, or less than 13, who should enjoy office during life, or good behaviour,—and he, with the Council, to have the right of making peace or war, and, generally, of treating with foreign states.

4. No taxes to be levied except by common consent in Parliament.

5. A standing army of 20,000 foot, and 10,000 horse, for England and Ireland, to be established, and funds provided for its support.

6. All professing faith in Christ, excepting Papists, Prelatists, and teachers of licentiousness, to be protected.

On seating himself, Cromwell was formally entreated, by Lambert, in the name of the three nations, to accept the office of Protector. On his signifying his consent, the Instrument of Government was read, and Cromwell swore to observe its articles.

2. *Under Oliver Cromwell's Protectorate, Decr. 16, 1653—Sept. 3, 1658:—*

At home, (save by enemies of him and his principles), and abroad, Cromwell was readily recognized.

The "Instrument" necessitating the calling together of a Parliament, the needful steps thereto were taken during 1654. The smaller boroughs, open to bribery and corruption, were disfranchised,—and of the 400 English members, 270 were returned by the counties, and the rest by London and the larger boroughs, while the voting was restricted to those possessing an estate of £200 value. Of the members returned to this,

CROMWELL'S FIRST PARLIAMENT, SEPT. 3, 1654—JAN. 23, 1655,—there were several Presbyterians, and Republicans.

Notwithstanding the pains that had been taken in

"packing" it, the *House shewed itself independent and refractory*, from the first, for, having listened to the Protector's opening harangue of three hours long, and elected Lenthall their Speaker, they commenced *discussing the Instrument of Government*, and, by a considerable majority, determined to decide the question whether the government should be in one individual, (Cromwell), or in themselves,—while even the Protector's conduct and private character were criticized. The latter, greatly enraged, summoned the Members to him, in the Painted Chamber,—pointed out to them the absurdity of disowning the authority by which they sat,—forbade them to discuss the fundamentals of the new Constitution,—and demanded from all the signing of an engagement to adhere to the existing "government in a single person and a Parliament." At the same time, he placed guards at the doors of the Hall, to prevent the entrance of non-subscribers.

Many of the more independent members, (including the Republicans), refused to sign: the rest consented, but continued their attempts to curb the Protector's power, and effect changes in the "Instrument." They had just embodied certain of the latter in a Bill, which they were preparing to pass when, unexpectedly to them, *Cromwell dissolved the House*, after an angry, slipshod, speech, in which he declared that its continuance was not for the national welfare, Jan. 22, 1655. The dissolution was unexpected, as the five months' *minimum* for the existence of the House did not expire, (reckoning by calendar months), till Feb. 3: Cromwell, however, chose to count, (as was the practice in the Army and Navy), by lunar months.

As Parliament had broken up before granting any supply,

Cromwell now levied a tax of £60,000 monthly on his own authority,—in this, again, imitating Charles I., in those very practices which had brought him to the scaffold! The amount was so small, however, in this case, that no difficulty ensued.

For refusal, however, to pay certain customs' dues, on the ground that they had not been imposed by Parliament, a London merchant, named

George Cony, was committed to prison!—He sued out his Habeas, whereupon *his counsel*,

Maynard, Twisden, and Windham, were sent to the Tower, for alleged seditious licence of speech, but were speedily released.

The case was never tried on its merits.—Chief-Justice Rolle, not wishing to decide against the Protector, resigned rather than condemn the accused unjustly,—and Glyn, who succeeded him, persuaded Cony to submit.

These arbitrary proceedings of Cromwell admit of no palliation !

Anxious to govern with a shew of constitutionalism, Cromwell summoned his

SECOND PARLIAMENT, SEPT. 17, 1656—FEB. 4, 1658.

—In spite of every effort to secure a House unanimous in his favor, the Protector, to his angry disappointment, found the elections, in numerous cases, adverse to himself. To meet this difficulty, he ordered the returns to be examined by the Council, and about 100 of the new Members to be declared disqualified, some on moral, others on political, grounds. On the assembling of the House, guards were set, with orders to admit only those who had warrants from the Council, and the unfortunate hundred found themselves, thus, debarred from taking their seats. To their indignant remonstrances and protests, Cromwell replied, with literal justice, that the "Instrument" had made provision for such action on its part as the Council had taken in the matter.

The *proceedings* of this House, in its *first Session*, were, mainly :—

1. **Voting supplies**,—no decision, however, being come to as to the source whence they should be obtained.

2. **Discussing private bills**,—of no great interest, in which much time was wasted.

3. **Prosecuting a fanatic**, named **Naylor**,—(see under "**Ecclesiastical, &c., Affairs**").

4. **Altering the Government**,—by means of the "*Humble Petition and Advice*."—Being able to count upon a majority, Cromwell determined to endeavour, by their means, to advance himself to the lofty position in the State at which he had long aspired. Accordingly, having, with hopeful result, sounded the Members, by the agency of Colonel Jephson, a Bill was brought forward by Alderman Pack, one of the City representatives, termed the

"Humble Petition and Advice," May, 1657,—which differed from the former "Instrument" only in proposing that Cromwell should

1. Assume the title of King.
2. Receive a settled revenue.
3. Have the appointment of his successor.

4. Govern by the advice of two Houses of Parliament, the new one to be termed "the other House,"—to be appointed by Cromwell,—to sit for life,—and exercise some of the functions of the former House of Peers.

This measure encountered great opposition, especially from the Major-Generals of the Army, and the officers dependent upon them, Lambert, (who aspired to succeed Cromwell), being foremost in antagonism to it. Nevertheless, it passed, by a large majority, and a

Committee was appointed to reason with the Protector, and induce him to lay aside the scruples which he professed to feel against embracing the offer. The consultation between them and him lasted several days. Cromwell was, really, only too ready and anxious to accept the honor, but he found such strenuous opposition from his own family connections, (a.g., Fleetwood, his son-in-law; and Desborough, his brother-in-law), and from those most devoted to him, that he was, reluctantly, compelled to decline the regal dignity.

The "*Humble Petition*," (with the omission of the article concerning Cromwell's proposed change of title), was, however, retained, in place of the "Instrument," as the basis of government, and, accordingly, the Protector was empowered to name his successor,—had a fixed revenue assigned him,—and had authority to name a second Chamber.

These changes being agreed upon, "*Cromwell, as if his power had just commenced from this popular consent, was anew inaugurated,*" as Protector, "in Westminster Hall, after the most solemn and most pompous manner."

Though compelled, against his own wish, to refuse the regal dignity, *Cromwell* was, during the remainder of his life, *sovereign in all but the name.*

Immediately upon the adoption of the "Humble Petition," he brought his son *Richard to Court*,—began to initiate him into public business,—and treated him as his chosen successor. The

Second Session of Parliament commenced Jan. 20, 1658. —Two Houses were summoned, (in accordance with the "Petition"). Cromwell had chosen, to compose his new House of Peers, 60 individuals, comprising some half-dozen of the old nobility, the rest being mostly *parvenus* of the Revolution, (*e.g.*, Whitelocke, Pride, Fleetwood, Desborough, and Claypole). This creation of an Upper Chamber was the most ill-advised and unfortunate of Cromwell's schemes: the old nobility invited refused to sit,—the people generally, in whom the sentiment of respect for aristocracy was strong, jeered contemptuously at an assembly of Peers manufactured out of draymen, and shoemakers,—and the "Levellers" were enraged at the appointment of a privileged class. Moreover, by drafting so many of his adherents into the Higher Chamber, the Protector made so many vacancies in the Lower that he was, perforce, necessitated to allow a number of the excluded to return, on their consenting to taking the oaths, the result being that he lost his power over the Commons, and the latter, instead of proceeding to the transaction of real business, launched into critical discussions concerning the rights and powers of the Upper House. In vain, the Protector urged them to proceed to their proper work,—whereupon, he, with his habitual decidedness, *dissolved Parliament, Feb. 4*, with angry and violent expressions, his last words to the Commons being "Let God judge between you and me!"

During the few remaining months of his life, the Protector ruled without a Parliament, and with very great severity.

When he was mortally attacked, and it was known that the next fit would be fatal to him, a deputation was sent, by the alarmed Council, to the Protector, to ask his will, as to his successor. He was, however, too far gone to reply coherently and fully. They, then, asked him whether he did not intend his eldest son, Richard, to assume his office, to which query it is said that he was just able to return a simple affirmative. Soon after, he died, *Sept. 3, 1658*.

3. *Under the Protectorate of Richard Cromwell:—*

Richard succeeded his father with pacific facility, Fleetwood, (in whose favor it was supposed Cromwell had made

a will), renouncing all pretension to office,—Henry Cromwell proclaiming his brother in Ireland, and General Monk performing the same office in Scotland,—and the Council, the Army, and the Navy readily accepting him, while 90 loyal addresses poured in from various parts of the country, congratulating him upon his accession.

One of the Protector's first steps was to call a *new*

PARLIAMENT, JAN. 29,—AP. 22, 1659,—which proceeded, at once, to an examination (ending, after a severe opposition from the leading officers and others, in a **Confirmation**), of the "**Humble Petition.**"

Meanwhile, Lambert, Fleetwood, and the other Army leaders, (who were, at heart, angry at the elevation of a man who had never fought for the Commonwealth), were caballing against the Protector, (whose weak character they knew), with the support of the by-no-means feeble Republican party in the Army, and induced him to give his consent to calling a

General Council of Officers,—who, forthwith, *proposed* that the whole military power should be given to some one in whom they might all confide—thus, virtually, providing for the establishment of an Army-supported, (and, thence, certain-to-be-successful), rival of Richard.

Parliament, alarmed equally with the Protector, at this daring scheme, at once *passed* a

Vote forbidding any Meeting, or General Council, of Officers, without the Protector's orders or consent.—This measure precipitated the crisis. The *officers*, (forming what is called the "**Cabal of Wallingford House**"), hastened to Richard, and vehemently *demand*ed the *dissolution of Parliament*, Desborough actually threatening him, should he refuse. The *Protector* weakly *yielded*, and, accordingly, *dissolved* the Assembly, April 22.

This act sealed his own demission. He continued to hold office, nominally, a month longer, and, then, quietly resigned.

4. From Richard Cromwell's Abdication to the Restoration:—

Upon the resignation of the second Protector, the supreme power was in the hands of the officers forming the "**Cabal**," (or, as some say, in Fleetwood, its head). By them, after much deliberation, the

"RUMP" of the **"LONG PARLIAMENT"** was **RESTORED**, **MAY 7, 1659**,—the number of Members responding to the summons being little over 70.

The *first act* of this fragmentary assembly was the *appointment of a*

Committee of Safety, May 9, to which was added a **Council of State, May 10**,—consisting of Fairfax, Lambert, Desborough, and 12 other soldiers, and Bradshaw, Whitelocke, Ashley, Cooper, and 13 other civilians. They, then, issued a

Declaration,—that the government would be without a "single person, Kingship, or House of Peers, and that all writs, &c., should again run in the name of the Keepers of the Liberties of England."

Demands now came from Wallingford House which shewed that the Army leaders intended to be the actual rulers. The Members, though few in number, were, mostly, experienced, energetic, and ambitious, men, and were determined to wield really, as well as nominally, the supreme power, and not to be the mere puppets of the Generals. Accordingly, these demands were unheeded, and, after much acrimonious wrangling, the House took the decided step of passing a

Vote that all Commissions should be received from the Speaker, and assigned to him in the name of Parliament.

This step greatly enraged the Officers, and would have led to some hostile demonstration on their part, had not apprehensions of a common enemy—the newly-allied Royalists and Presbyterians,—rendered a hollow, tacit, truce, imperatively necessary.

The conspirators having been defeated by him, Lambert and his party grew more and more overbearing and threatening, whereupon, the House passed a bold

Vote that Lambert, Desborough, and the other Generals should be deprived of their commissions,—a measure which brought about the

Exclusion of the "Rump" fragment, Oct. 13, 1659,—Lambert and his regiment going down to Westminster, and preventing the Members from taking their seats. The government thus fell, again, into the power of the Army, which the Officers defended, on the ground that it was law-

ful to rise against Parliament when it failed to maintain the just rights and liberties of the people. The next step of the Army chiefs was to appoint a

Committee of Safety, consisting of 23 persons, whom they invested with sovereign authority.

Throughout the country, there was, now, dissatisfaction at the policy of the Generals, and a melancholy foreboding of murder and confiscation on the part of the Royalists and gentry; and of servitude on that of the people generally. As to Prince Charles, all hope seemed gone for ever for him. Meanwhile, however, in conformity with the old adage, that "the darkest hour is just before the dawn," there was preparing one of the most striking and best managed *coups d'état* the world has ever seen.

General Monk, the commander of the forces in Scotland, had been keenly watching events, since Oliver's death. He had, it would seem, long had at heart the design of effecting the restoration of the Royal line, and saw in the state of affairs ensuing upon the exclusion of the "Rump" the key-note of action. *Taking the title of "Assertor of the Ancient Laws and Liberties of the Country,"* he sent a protest to the Council against the high-handed proceedings of the Generals. Then, cashiering all his officers of whom he had the slightest doubt, he obtained the oaths of the rest to stand by him,—and letters announcing his and their determination to support the Parliament, were sent to the Speaker of the excluded House, to the Council at Wallingford House, and to the Commander of the Fleet.

The Council, rightly suspecting the ulterior purpose of Monk, directed Lambert to march North, with a force to stay the Scotch commander on his way, should he advance into England. Accordingly, the former set out, and reached Newcastle, where he stopped to assemble a larger army.

In his absence, all went wrong with the cause he represented.—

Haslrigge, and Morley, took possession of Portsmouth, on behalf of the Parliament,—in the City, riots broke out, with cries for a free Parliament, and taxation by that body alone; and a sort of independent government was formed,—and Admiral Lawson came into the Thames, with his squadron and declared for the Parliament, whereupon the captors of Portsmouth left that place, and hastened towards London, near which lay several regi-

ments. These, being solicited by their former officers, (whom the Committee of Safety had cashiered), readily declared for the Parliament, whereupon, Desborough fled, Fleetwood resigned, and Lenthal, persuaded thereto by the Officers, caused the

"RUMP" to be **RESUMMONED**, (DEC. 28, 1659—MARCH, 16, 1660).

Allowing himself to be amused by negotiations, Lambert remained in the N., inactive, his forces rapidly dwindling away, while

Monk marched upon the Metropolis, everywhere warmly greeted by the gentry, who universally expressed their hopes that he might be made instrumental in restoring peace and order. He reached London, with 5,000 troops, Feb. 3, 1660, and was, forthwith, introduced to the House, *Lenthal* heartily thanking him, in its and the country's name, for the services he had rendered his country.

The General, then, marched his men into the City, to exact from several citizens obedience to the Parliament, with whom he declared, in Common Council, that he intended to unite his fortune, whereupon the whole of London went crazy, and put itself *en fête*.

He next ordered *Parliament*, in the name of the citizens, soldiers, and Commonwealth generally, to issue writs within a week for filling the House by the reinstatement of the excluded Presbyterian Members,—and to fix the terms for their own dissolution and the appointment of a new Chamber. At his invitation, the excluded ones went to the House, where they found themselves in a majority; the Independents, then, mostly, retired. The augmented, restored,

"Long Parliament" met again, Feb. 21, 1660, and proceeded to

1. Annul all the Votes concerning the exclusion of the Presbyterians in 1648.

2. Declare the Presbyterian faith to be that of the Church of England, and order a copy of the League and Covenant to be hung up in every church.

3. Appoint a new Council of State, (strongly Royalist).

4. Fix Ap. 25 for the assembling of a new Parliament, (for which they, at once, issued writs).

They, then, broke up, their separation constituting the final

**Dissolution of the immortal "Long Parliament,"
March 16, 1660.**

The *Council of State* now conferred on *Montague*, (a Royalist), and *Monk*, the command of the *Fleet*.

Up to this point, Monk had kept up a show of zeal for the Commonwealth, and had scrupulously abstained from opening communications with Charles; now, however, he sent a verbal message, by Sir Jno. Grenville, assuring the King of his attachment and services,—proffering advice as to His Majesty's conduct,—and, (fearing lest Spain might keep him as a hostage for the restoration of Dunkirk and Jamaica), urging him to leave Spanish territory, for Holland, immediately. Charles, who was at Brussels, at once started, and narrowly escaped to Breda: had he been a few hours later in starting, doubtless, he would have been arrested.

Lambert had been sent, by Monk, (when the latter had secured the chief authority), to the Tower. He, now, managed to escape, and to assemble some forces, but was defeated, by Ingoldsby, near

Daventry, April 21,—and taken prisoner, together with Okey, Axtell, and Creed.—(*N.B.* *This should have been inserted at the end of "CIVIL WAR."*)

The elections for the new Parliament were everywhere in favor of the Royalists and the Presbyterians, now united in the King's cause, and representing the national desire, which was emphatically and urgently in favour of the restoration of monarchy. The

"CONVENTION" PARLIAMENT, (so termed because not regularly summoned by the Royal act), assembled **APRIL 25, 1660**, and chose Sir Harbottle Grimstone Speaker.

The Peers, (excepting those who had sat in Charles I.'s Chamber at Oxford), were allowed to take their places in the Upper House.

Monk, in his further communications with the King's agents, had suggested that Charles should send a letter to the new Assembly, offering very favorable terms of reconciliation, and governmental proposals, thereby to win their goodwill.

Accordingly, a formal

Motion for the Restoration of Monarchy having been made, by Colonel King, and Mr. Finch, April 27, it was, by Monk's instructions, announced to the House, by Annesley, President of the Council, May 1, that Sir John Grenville had been sent over, and was then in waiting outside, with a communication from the King to the Commons. The announcement was hailed with the loudest acclamations,—Grenville was called in,—and the letter read, as well as an enclosed paper, setting forth Charles's intentions, and known as the

Declaration of Breda, —promising

1. A free pardon to all, (save those whom Parliament should thereafter except), who should, within forty days, return to their allegiance.

2. A free Parliament, in which all just rights should be resettled.

3. Religious toleration for all differences of opinion that would not disturb the peace of the Kingdom.

4. Settlement, by Parliament, of all questions affecting estates whose ownership had been altered by the Civil War.

5. That the army should be paid all arrears, and taken into the Royal service.

Copies of the same papers were delivered, and read, simultaneously, to the Lords, and were *received* by them *with equal fervor*. Without delay, the *Convention*, now, *passed, unanimously, a*

Vote that,

1. "By the ancient and fundamental laws of the Realm, the Government was, and ought to be, by King, Lords, and Commons."

2. Charles be invited to come over, and ascend the Throne.

Some few members ventured to suggest that it was advisable, before the King was restored, to have a clear settlement of those important questions which had caused the Civil War,—but in vain : and, thus, the Restoration was effected without a single guarantee against a recurrence of that misrule that had been the ruin of the young monarch's father and the origin of so much national woe.

A *Committee* was appointed to draw up a reply to the "Declaration," and it, with the letter, was ordered to be published. *Parliament passed, also,*

Votes that

1. The **Arms of the Commonwealth** be effaced.
2. The **King's name** be introduced into the Church Service.
3. His accession date from the day of Charles I.'s death.

By order, and in presence, of the two Houses, the **King** was solemnly proclaimed, in Palace-Yard, Whitehall, **May 8, 1660**, after which, a deputed Committee of both Chambers was despatched to invite his immediate return, and assumption of the Crown.

Embarking at Scheveling, on board a fleet commanded by his brother, York,

Charles reached England safely, and landed, **May 25**, at Dover, where he was met by, and warmly welcomed, Monk, at the head of the nobility and gentry. From the coast to the Metropolis, his progress was one continuous ovation, and he entered London, amidst the maddest excitement and most vociferous plaudits, **May 29**, the anniversary of his birthday,—the concurrence of the two events on the same day being regarded, by his friends, as the happiest of omens.

ECCELESIASTICAL, &c., AFFAIRS.

Primacy.—Vacant, (1645–1660.)

After the downfall of the Monarchy, the

Penal Laws against Nonconformists were abolished.

The *Commonwealth* was distinguished, in connection with ecclesiastical and religious matters, by

1. "**Mixed Religious Tolerance.**—Party writers have taken two extreme views on this point, and have found no difficulty in supporting them. One makes out the Commonwealth to have been a period of unparalleled religious tolerance, the other proves it one of cruel intolerance. It was really neither one nor the other, but a singular union of both. The universal tolerance claimed for it did not comprehend the Church of England or the Roman Catholics, and thus excluded the majority of the people. The use of the Common Prayer was proscribed with great strictness, and those clergymen who retained their incumbencies were compelled to give it up, or use it evasively,"

until the Protectorate of Cromwell, who shewed greater liberality. Under his rule, the clergy of the capital in some instances openly carried on worship, and he even promised Usher not to enforce the ordinance of 1656, (due to Royalist plots), excluding the clergy from holding fellowships and chaplaincies, and becoming schoolmasters, — unless they should be guilty of political offences.

“The Roman Catholics were in a worse case, for several priests were condemned to death for exercising the functions of their priestly office, and one actually suffered the extreme penalty.”

The Quakers, too, were severely dealt with, *e.g.*, in the before-mentioned case of

“James Naylor, who had been an officer in the Parliamentary army. For professing some religious fancies,” (*e.g.*, that he was “the Everlasting Son, the Prince of Peace”), “he was sentenced, by a vote of the Parliament, to be *pilloried* at Westminster, *whipped* thence to the Royal Exchange, and there *pilloried again*: that at the latter place *his tongue* should be *bored* with a red-hot iron, and *his forehead* branded with a B.; he was then to be sent to Bristol, where he was apprehended, and in that place to be carried on horseback, riding backwards through the city, *publicly whipped*, and then sent back to Bridewell in London, there to be kept to hard labor during the pleasure of the Parliament.” The Star-Chamber never outdid this!

2. “The Appearance of many Singular Forms of Sectarianism.—The appearance of the numerous sectaries, after the assembling of the long parliament, was but a natural result of what was termed ‘independency,’ or religious liberalism. So early as 1646, a writer gave a list of no less than sixteen sects then flourishing in England, and the number was afterwards greatly increased. The most singular were the Quakers, the Muggletonians, and the Millenarians.

The Quakers were founded by George Fox, a shoemaker of Drayton, Leicestershire, and distinguished by depending, not upon the written Word, but internal illumination; and the disuse of the sacraments and ordinary modes of worship.

The Muggletonians professed to be believers in John Reeve, and Ludowick Muggleton, the two last prophets and messengers of God. The heads of this singular sect

could both cast out devils, and deliver men without fail to be damned, body and soul, to eternity.

The *Millenarians*, (or, *Fifth-Monarchy Men*), were those who believed in the coming of Christ to reign on earth for a thousand years, during which they themselves should be kings and priests. This sect gave Cromwell much trouble. By their creed, the government of a single individual was a sacrilegious assumption of the authority belonging to the only king, the Lord Jesus."

During the days of the Commonwealth, the most rigid austerity was enforced, as regarded all pastimes, &c. : the *Book of Sports* was abolished,—the Maypoles were cut down, and their revels, (and all others), forbidden—the theatres closed, and all stage performances prohibited. It was to the natural rebound from this Puritanical sternness that the terrible laxity of morals of the ensuing reign was greatly owing !

VARIOUS MATTERS.

Coffee was introduced, by a Turkey merchant, 1652
The

Jews were allowed to settle in England, again, 1655, for the first time since their banishment under Edward I., 1290. The

Postal System was revised, and improved, 1656,—greatly to the advantage of trade.

Posts had been established between many of the chief towns in 1635. This system was destroyed by the Civil War, and a Mr. Manley then farmed the conveyance of letters, for £10,000 yearly, until the introduction of the new plan. Under this arrangement, posts went, and arrived, on alternate days only, on most of the roads,—while in out-of-the-way districts there was but one service per week !

"**Killing, no Murder,**"—the title of a pamphlet, by Captain Titus, (or, as some think, Colonel Saxby), published in Holland, advocating the assassination of Oliver Cromwell, upon whom and the nation at large it made a profound impression. The

Court of Chivalry was abolished, (but revived under Charles II.).

SCOTCH AFFAIRS.

After the defeat of Montrose, and of Hamilton, the entire power in Scotland rested in *Argyle and his party*. These, representing, in the matter, the national feeling, refused an urgent invitation of the English Parliament to establish a republican government, and determined to preserve and maintain, (as, by the terms of the "Covenant," they were bound to do), the monarchy. Accordingly, almost immediately upon the execution of Charles I., they *proceeded to the*

Proclamation of Charles II., as successor to his father, **Feb. 5, 1649**,—upon condition, however, of his strict observance of the "Covenant."

This proviso was eminently distasteful to the gay young King, and he, therefore, determined, before accepting the terms offered him by the Scots, to await the result of an *invasionary*

EXPEDITION, BY MONTROSE, 1650, with the design of raising the Scotch Royalists.

Assisted by some of the northern powers, the Marquis landed, with 500 men, mostly Germans, in the Orkneys, in January, and, having armed about 500 of the islanders, passed over, with his augmented force, to the mainland. Here, however, he met with bitter disappointment, scarcely anyone joining him.

A body of Covenanting cavalry, coming upon him by surprise, engaged his small following in *battle at*

Corbiesdale, (Ross), April 27.—*Covenanters victorious.*

C. com.—General Strachan.

R. "—Marquis of Montrose.

The invaders were overwhelmed, and all either slain or captured. *Montrose*, himself, however, escaped, in the garb of a peasant, but, after three days' wandering, was betrayed by a friend, to whom he entrusted himself. He was, then, carried, in his disguise, to Edinburgh, amid grossest insults from his enemies, and, there, tried and condemned by the Parliament, and, with the greatest cruelty and ignominy, *executed, May 21*, his legs and arms being sent to four of the chief towns, and his head fixed on top of a spike, on the Tolbooth Prison, in the Capital.

Charles had built much upon this attempt, but, on its failure, he actually declared to the Parliament that he had had no voice in it, nay! had strenuously dissuaded Montrose from it! Seeing that, now, there was no other course open to him, he gave his consent to the conditions proposed by Argyle and party, in a

Treaty, signed, by him, on oath, at Breda.

Articles:—

Charles promised to

1. Adopt the "Covenants."
2. Acknowledge all Parliaments convened since the commencement of the Civil War.
3. Disavow and disannul the peace with the Irish rebels.
4. Never tolerate the exercise of the Romish religion.
5. Govern by advice of, Parliament in political, and the Kirk in religious, matters.

These preliminaries being settled, he sailed from Breda, reached Scotland, after a tedious voyage, *June 16*, and landed in the Frith of Cromarty, having been, previously, compelled to take the Covenants, and to listen to many long-winded, dry exhortations to adhere thereto.

It was not long before the young monarch discovered that he was a mere puppet and tool in the hands of the *Covenanters*, who, not content with keeping him without a vestige of power, actually compelled him to issue a

Declaration,

1. Expressing himself deeply abased and afflicted at his father's opposing the Covenant, and shedding the blood of God's people.
2. Bewailing his mother's idolatry, and the toleration thereof in his father's house.
3. Promising that he would have no enemies but those of the Covenant.

The English Government were, naturally, alarmed at these proceedings in Scotland, for they, rightly, judged that the ascendancy of the Presbyterians would be a death-blow to their power. Accordingly, they determined upon a war. Fairfax, who was a devoted Presbyterian, declined to undertake the command of the invasionary force, and resigned his commission, which was, accordingly, bestowed upon Cromwell, (who was recalled from Ireland), with the title of "Captain-General" of all the forces in England.

At the head of 16,000 troops, mostly veteran "Ironsides," he crossed the Tweed July 16, to renew the
CIVIL WAR, (1642)—1651. In
1650:—

The country, from the Border to the Capital, the invaders found waste and deserted, the inhabitants, (terrified by reports of the cruelties intended to be perpetrated by the English), having disappeared, after destroying their cattle and provisions.

Cromwell found Leslie, the Scotch commander, entrenched between Edinburgh and Leith, in so strong a position that attack was out of the question. After several vain attempts to entice the enemy into an engagement, the Captain-General was compelled, by sickness in his army and want of provisions, (for his supplies of which he depended upon sea-conveyance, alone), to retire to Dunbar, "a seaport town, which lies in a valley, surrounded on three sides by an amphitheatre of hills, in which there are two narrow openings, one on the north, the other on the south."

Leslie, following Cromwell, took possession of the heights and the passes, thus shutting up the English army so closely and completely that the only course open to Oliver, in order to escape destruction, appeared to be to embark his foot and artillery, for England, and cut his way through the envioning foe, with the cavalry. The folly, however, of the Committee of Estates lost the Scots their almost certain triumph. Assured that, in answer to their prayers, the Lord had delivered "Agag," (as they termed Cromwell), and his host into their hands, and fearful lest he should slip out of their hands, they over-persuaded their unwilling commander to quit his position on the heights, descend into the valley, and give the English battle at

Dunbar, Sep. 3.—English victorious.

E. com.—Cromwell.

Scotch com.—David Leslie.

Cromwell, on seeing the enemy's forces descending, instantly perceived their fatal error, and, exclaiming, "The Lord hath delivered them into our hands"! gave orders for the attack. A terrible conflict ensued, at first in favour of the Scotch, but Cromwell's regiment, avalanche-like, bore down all opposition, and, in less than one hour, the Scots, though double in number, were utterly routed. Just before the decisive attack, the sun broke resplen-

dently through a hitherto-obscuring fog, whereupon Cromwell cried, exultingly, "Now let God arise, and let his enemies be scattered"! a sanguinary flight and pursuit for eight miles followed the defeat. The victory was complete, the enemy's loss being 3,000 slain, and 10,000 prisoners. The remnant of the beaten army reached Perth.

After this triumph, the English general, giving up all idea of retiring, advanced upon

Edinburgh, which, *as well as Leith, fell into his hands, and the whole of the*

South speedily submitted.

Edinburgh Castle held out for three months, and, then, *capitulated.*

The approach of winter, and an attack of ague, compelled Cromwell to close the campaign, his sickness preventing his resuming hostilities till the succeeding July.

Charles was rejoiced at the defeat of the Covenanters, since it lessened the power of Argyle and Co., his task-masters. He determined to take advantage of circumstances to throw himself upon the support of the Royalists. Accordingly, he entered into correspondence with Murray, Athol, Huntly, and others of the party in the Highlands, and, escaping from Perth, under pretence of hawking, made an attempt, called the

"Start,"—to join them, but was followed, and persuaded to return. The escapade had its good result, for he was thenceforth treated with greater deference and consideration, being allowed to even preside at the Councils of the Committee.

In

1651:—

Charles was, with all pomp and solemnity, crowned, Jan. 1, at Scone, where, upon his knees, in the church, *he swore, by the Eternal God, to*

1. Observe the Covenants.
2. Establish Presbyterianism in Scotland and his family.
3. Rule according to law.
4. Root out all heresy.

Argyle then placed the Crown upon his head, and the nobles and the people swore allegiance to him. The

Campaign

Of this year was commenced by the Scotch, whose army

assembled, as soon as the season admitted, under Hamilton, and Leslie, Charles joining the camp before Stirling.

Cromwell took the field in July, and, after various marches and counter-marches, crossed the Forth, and so pressed upon the enemy's rear that they retired, leaving open to him the seat of Government,

Perth,—which fell into his hands.

At this juncture, the King formed the daring scheme, ("worthy of a young prince contending for Empire"), of marching into England, and advancing rapidly upon London. Most of his generals consented, but Argyle begged to be excused, and retired to his home.

With about 12,000 of the army, Charles, who calculated upon being joined, in England, by overwhelming numbers of Royalists and Presbyterians, broke up the camp at Stirling,—set out thence July 31,—and, swiftly traversing the Lowlands, *crossed the Border*, advancing South by way of Carlisle.

The movement was a complete surprise to Cromwell, who did not hear of it until three days after Charles had started. As soon as the intelligence reached him, he sent off Lambert, post-haste, to harass the King's rear,—sent instructions to Harrison, (then at Newcastle), being on the flank,—and, leaving Monk, with 7,000 men, to finish the reduction of Scotland, himself set out, with the rest of the army, in hot pursuit, by way of York.

Meanwhile, Charles was finding his bright hopes of swelling his numbers fallacious: The English Royalists and Presbyterians, having had no warning of his approach, were not prepared to join him, and his own men, discouraged at the hazardous nature of the expedition, as it developed itself to them in its true colors, deserted wholesale. Thus, when, three weeks after his departure from Stirling, he reached Worcester, Aug. 22, he found his forces not larger than when he started, besides being utterly worn-out by severe forced marches.

The advance of the Scots, however, caused great consternation in the country, and in London there were many who condemned Cromwell for allowing Charles to out-general him, and some who even expressed suspicions of his fidelity.

The Captain-General arrived in the neighbourhood of the King six days after the latter's reaching Worcester,

and, joining his forces to those of Lambert, Harrison, and Robert Lilburne, he fought the great *battle of*

Worcester, Sep. 3, (the Protector's fortunate day, as he considered—though it proved to be the date of his death, as well as of his victories of Worcester and Dunbar),—*Parliamentarians victorious.*

P. cons.—Cromwell; Lambert; Harrison.

R. „—Charles II.; David Leslie.

Cromwell attacked the suburbs of the city on all sides, and, after an obstinate struggle of four or five hours, forced his way into the streets, where the fight was decided, after a further furious struggle, which left them thickly strewn with dead. In *this decisive engagement*, which ruined Charles's hopes, and *ended the Civil War, as far as England was concerned*, the Royalists lost 3,000 slain, and 7,000 prisoners, while the small remnant who escaped were put to death by the country-people, "inflamed with national antipathy" against the invaders. Well might Cromwell write to the Parliament, on this eventful day, "The dimensions of this mercy are above my thoughts. It is, for aught I know, a crowning mercy!"

Of the prisoners, several of rank, including the Earl of Derby, were executed, and numbers of the rank and file were sent as slaves to the Colonies! The Duke of Hamilton, (brother of the late peer), was captured, and wounded, —and died soon after.

Monk, left behind, by Cromwell, to finish the reduction of the country, *took*

Stirling Castle,—amongst the spoil being the public records and part of the *regalia*, which he sent to London,—*carried by storm*

Dundee,—which yielded plunder to the value of £200,000: he put all the inhabitants to death, according to Cromwell's example (in Ireland) and instructions.

This summary measure so terrified, (as was intended), their defenders, that

Aberdeen, St. Andrew's, Inverness, and other towns, *capitulated.*

Argyle now made submission to the Commonwealth. The *authority of the English Parliament* was speedily *established throughout the country*, under the direction of Sir Harry Vane, St. John, and other commissioners, who

were sent to settle the kingdom. An annual tax of £130,000 was levied for the support of the English army, and English judges were appointed to go on circuit, superseding the Courts of Session. Finally,

Cromwell incorporated Scotland with England, Ap. 12, 1654.

Charles's Adventures,—after the battle of Worcester, constitute a narrative strikingly romantic and thrillingly exciting. Escaping from the city, about six o'clock, on the evening of the fight, he travelled, without drawing rein, 20 miles, accompanied by about 60 other fugitives. He, then, parted with these, for safety's sake, and, by direction of the Earl of Derby, betook himself to the house of one Penderell, a farmer, living at Boscobel, a solitary house, on the borders of Staffordshire. The honest yeoman, though the death-penalty was proclaimed against all who should countenance the King, and large rewards were offered for his betrayal, loyally sheltered his sovereign, disguising him as an ordinary laborer. On one occasion, during the sojourn at Boscobel, Charles was compelled, by the appearance of some of the soldiers on the look-out for him, to take refuge amid the boughs of an oak, whence he saw his enemies searching, beneath him, amongst the trees, for himself, and heard them expressing their anxiety to capture him. The tree afterwards bore the name of the "Royal Oak," and it became the custom, (still remaining amongst boys, at least), in memory of the successful concealment of the King, to wear a sprig of oak on May 29, (the anniversary of the Restoration), which has, hence, been named "Royal-Oak-Day."

After many such hairbreadth escapes, in various disguises, and after having experienced the utmost fidelity and kindness from numerous individuals, (over 40, it is said), to whom he was compelled to trust, Charles reached, in safety, Shoreham, in Sussex, whence, after lying, for some days, *perdu*, in the roof of a house, (still shewn), he succeeded in escaping to Fécamp, in a small vessel belonging to a sailor, one Nicholas Tattersall, whose tomb, with inscription, (still legible), is to be seen in the grave-yard attached to the Old Parish Church, Brighton. The Royal fugitive reached France Oct. 17, about six weeks after the battle of Worcester.

IRISH AFFAIRS.

Upon the death of Charles I., his son was proclaimed in the island, by Ormond, who strenuously urged the young prince to come thither, so promising seemed the Royalist cause. The power of the Parliament was confined almost entirely to Londonderry, and Dublin, and the latter city was threatened with a siege.

Under these grave circumstances, it was determined to send over the doughty Oliver, to reduce the country to obedience: he, nothing loath to assume a post which offered a grand opportunity for acquiring fresh glory and influence, and so advancing his personal designs, accepted the posts of Lieutenant, and Generalissimo, and set himself earnestly about making speedy and effective preparations for the expedition.

Meanwhile, he sent over, to reinforce Colonel Jones, the Governor of Dublin, a body of 4000 troops. The first engagement in *continuation of the*

CIVIL WAR, under the Commonwealth, in
1649,

was a *battle at*

Rathmines, Aug. 2,—*Parliamentarians victorious.*

P. com.—Colonel Jones.

R. "—Marquis of Ormond.

The Marquis was besieging the place, when Jones, with the English reinforcement, surprised, and utterly routed, him, with loss of artillery, baggage, and ammunition; 1000 slain; and 2000 prisoners. This blow did irreparable mischief to the Royal cause.

Cromwell, with 12,000 veterans, and a heavy battering-train, landed at Dublin, Aug. 15, amidst the greatest enthusiasm. After a fortnight's rest, he proceeded to form the *siege of*

Drogheda.—*Parliamentarians victorious.*

P. coms.—Cromwell; Ireton.

R. com.—Sir Arthur Aston.

which, strongly fortified, and garrisoned with 2,500 troops, promised a successful resistance. Two assaults were repelled, but the third, led by Cromwell and Ireton, in person, was triumphant, and the town was *captured*

Sept. 11. Cromwell thus pithily describes the affair, "It hath pleased God to bless our endeavours at Drogheda; after battering, we stormed it. The enemy were about three thousand strong in the town. *We refused them quarter, having the day before summoned the town. I believe we put to the sword the whole number of the defendants. I do not think thirty of the whole number escaped with their lives; those that did are in safe custody for Barbadoes.* The English next formed the *siege of*

Wexford.—*Parliamentarians victorious.*

P. com.—Cromwell.

R. "—Colonel David Sinnott.

The town was taken by assault, **Octr. 11,** and, here, again, the garrison, between 2000 and 3000 strong, was massacred.

The consequence of these two massacres was what Cromwell intended—for

Cork, Youghal, Bandon, Kinsale, and every other place before which he appeared, *surrendered* voluntarily.

In the campaign of

1650,

which opened in January, Cromwell, with fresh reinforcements from England, continued the work of reduction.

Fethard, Callen, Gowran, *capitulated* voluntarily, and

Kilkenny, and Clonmel, were *captured*, after a brave resistance.

Ormond now *quitted* the Island, leaving, to act in his stead, *Clanricarde*, who, finding affairs desperate, *threw up his hand.*

The beaten and dispirited Irish "were glad to embrace banishment as a refuge," and, with Cromwell's leave, 40,000 *quitted* their native country to take military service in foreign lands.

Cromwell was summoned home, to take the Scotch command, in May, and left

Ireton as *Lieutenant*,—with the task of completing the subjugation of the country. After reducing several places, he formed the *siege of*

Limerick.—*Parliamentarians victorious.*

P. com.—*Ireton.*

R. "—Hugh O'Neill.

The town *capitulated* Oct. 27, after 15 months' brave resistance.

A month later, *Ireton died*, of pestilence. He was *succeeded* in the command by

Ludlow, who *finished* the *subjugation* of the Island, and *made*

Terms of Accommodation with the Irish Leaders, 1653.

Fleetwood, then, became *Deputy*,—being assisted in the civil government by 4 Commissioners.

The new authorities instituted an

Enquiry into the Murders proceeding out of the Rebellion of 1641,—issuing in the execution of about 200 persons.

Henry Cromwell was *Deputy* from Aug., 1654, to June, 1659, and, by his wise and conciliatory rule, placed Ireland in a better condition than it had hitherto occupied. This happier state of things is attributable to, also, new settlers, consisting of English adventurers who had subscribed money at the commencement of the troubles in Ireland, and of soldiers who had served under Cromwell, both of which classes received, as, respectively, reimbursement, and arrears of pay, portions of estates confiscated from Romanists and Royalists, by an

Act for the Settlement of the Country, 1652,—whereby such forfeitures were decreed—to be regulated by the character of the offence.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS.

France.	Germany.	Spain.	Popes.
LOUIS XIV.	FERDINAND III.	PHILIP IV.	INNOCENT X.
	LEOPOLD I.		ALEXANDER VII.



GENERAL NOTES.

GOVERNMENT.

The *distinctive feature* of the Stuart Period is the arduous and continuous *struggle*, on the part of the people, *against the arbitrary and unconstitutional government* of their rulers.

Two great causes were influential in exciting this opposition :—

1. Owing, chiefly, to the facilities granted by Henry VII. for the alienation of land, wealthy and middle-class men had been enabled to buy the estates of old, but needy, noble families. Thus, there had arisen a *new landed gentry*,—untrammelled by ancient traditions and prejudices, and of independent habits of thought and speech. It was this stamp of men that formed the majority in the Commons at the end of the Tudor, and during the Stuart, Period. They had already shown an undaunted front to Elizabeth, and were not likely to yield to the wild pretensions of James I. and his House.

2. The *Reformation* had given a marvellous impulse to free thought and enquiry, and rendered the people eager for civil, as well as religious, liberty.

These causes were at work, to some extent, during the second half of the Tudor period, but never brought about any serious misunderstanding between people and sovereign, owing to the able and determined character of that dynasty,—and to their wisdom in contenting “themselves with practical triumphs.” Elizabeth, indeed, in whose reign these influences had become more powerful than in those of her predecessors, met with strenuous opposition at times from the Commons. But she had the rare sagacity to yield at the critical moment, and that so gracefully as to win for herself fresh regard and affection.

The Stuarts had to encounter a stronger national love of freedom and opposition to tyranny than the Tudors had,—while, at the same time, their pretensions were higher, and were made, by them, an “abstract question of principle”—and their ability, judgment, and will, were infinitely weaker than those of the preceding dynasty.

Under such circumstances, the troubles that arose during this period were inevitable.

The chief source of the unconstitutional acts of the early sovereigns of the Stuart Line was their firm belief in the "Divine right of kings," on which doctrine James I. was almost crazed, and which he effectually transmitted to his son.

The former found, however, Parliament firmly opposed to his notions, and determined to reassert the popular rights which had, under the Tudors, been in partial abeyance. He being equally determined, on his side, the reign of the first of the Stuarts saw the commencement of that tremendous grapple between arbitrary sovereign and Commons, (championing the liberties of the people), which issued in the crushing fall of the former.

Under James I. the struggle was, comparatively, tame. Yet, the steady persistence of *Parliament* was far from resultless.—"They obtained," it is true, only "one legislative measure of importance," viz., a "*declaration against monopolies*. But they had rescued from disuse their ancient right of impeachment. They had placed on record a protestation of their claim to debate all matters of public concern. They had remonstrated against the usurped prerogatives of binding the subject by proclamation, and of levying customs at the out-ports. They had secured, beyond controversy, their exclusive privilege of determining contested elections of their members.

"Of these advantages, some were evidently incomplete, and it would require the most vigorous exertions of future parliaments to realize them. But such exertions the increased energy of the nation gave abundant cause to anticipate."

At the accession of Charles I., "*a deep and lasting love of freedom had taken hold of every class*, (except, perhaps, the clergy); from which, when viewed together with the rash pride of the court, and the uncertainty of constitutional principles and precedents, collected through our long and various history, a calm bystander might presage that the ensuing reign would not pass without disturbance; or, perhaps, end without confusion."

Charles I. had a higher notion than even his father of his prerogative, (believing, throughout, that he was "fully justified to the arbitrary power that he attempted to

exercise"), and, consequently, invaded the nation's liberties to an unprecedented extent, and, thus, provoked the storm which overthrew him.

When the climax of his mad acts was reached, and Parliament determined to secure full and solid guarantees for future good government and the preservation of the popular liberties, matters might have been arranged on a footing satisfactory to the nation, and not dishonoring to Charles, had it not been that the mistrust with which the King's duplicity had filled the minds of the popular champions led the latter to determine to guard against any future attempt on the part of the monarch to regain the power he had surrendered, by insisting on such extreme demands as made a composition practically impossible, and rendered war almost inevitable.

Of these demands, that for *the direction of the army was the main difficulty*. The control of the forces was an undoubted Royal prerogative, but the circumstances were so critical that, (though, in the abstract, they had right against them), the Commons were resolved, (justifiably, and wisely), to make a small, in order to prevent a greater, breach of the Constitution.

From the death of Charles to Cromwell's expulsion of the "Rump," the Government was in the hands of the latter. Afterwards, up till his death, the direction of affairs was, with brief limitations during the sessions of his Parliaments, directed by *Cromwell*. He was, in his way, as autocratic as the Stuarts,—as shewn in, *e.g.*, his arbitrarily dismissing Parliaments, and raising money on his own authority. There is no doubt he saw more clearly than any one living, what was best for the country's interest, and that many of his illegal measures were really beneficial; but this is no valid excuse for his conduct, especially when it is remembered that he had aided in executing a king for like violations of the Constitution.

Revenue.—*Under Charles I.*, the Customs, and the Revenue generally, nearly doubled their previous amount. The total Royal income, before the meeting of the Long Parliament, was about £900,000, of which Customs formed about £500,000.

Under the Commonwealth, the average receipts were £2,000,000,—yet the expenditure exceeded this amount.

SOCIAL LIFE AND MANNERS.

Food.—The gluttony and intemperance which had, under James I., distinguished the Court and the upper classes, received a check on the accession of Charles I., whose reign was, in these respects, a great contrast to his father's. During the Commonwealth, the reformation was complete, Cromwell himself setting a striking example of moderation and simplicity in living, dress, &c.

The lower classes, on the whole, enjoyed plenty, though their bread was, mainly, of rye and barley.

Coffee was introduced, (as already mentioned). Smoking became, more than ever, a national habit.

Dress.—The male costume which came into vogue under Charles I., and is known as the "Vandyke dress," (owing to its having been that of the period when that artist painted our ancestors), was, decidedly, the most easy, elegant, and becoming, that the nation has ever adopted. Its main features were the drooping, plumed, hat; the long lace collar; the doublet, with slashed sleeves; the trunk-hose; and rosetted shoes.

The difference between the garb of the gentry and the middle-class—the Cavaliers and the Puritans—consisted more in the material, cut, and degree of ornament, than in the general style: some of the latter, indeed, vied with the former in the article of apparel. It was only a portion of the Parliamentary forces, (*viz.*, that more immediately under the influence of Cromwell), that adopted an extreme and studied plainness of dress. The like holds good regarding the fashion of wearing the hair. The Cavaliers allowed their locks to grow to a great length: numbers of the opposite party did the same, and only comparatively few of them had the head shorn to a greater extent than is customary at the present day.

The *females* habit remained much the same as under the Tudors.

Houses,—were, more and more, built of brick and stone, though, in contravention of a Proclamation made in 1605, erections of timber continued to be put up in London.

Furniture,—in the best houses, assumed a very ornate and elaborate character.

Paintings began to be employed to adorn rooms. Rushes still strewed the floors of even the greatest, while Persian

and Turkey carpets, though imported, were used merely as table-covers.

Amusements.—Under Charles I., horse-racing grew in popularity, and bull- and bear-baiting, (especially the latter), held their place in popular esteem. Rustic sports of all kinds marked the Whitsun and other festivals, and were indulged in, (as before stated), on Sabbath evenings.

The *Drama*, too, (especially in the form of the *Masque*), was extremely popular. In 1642, however, the Long Parliament "*suppressed*" public stage plays throughout the kingdom during these calamitous times, and in 1648 completely abolished them, ordering the theatres to be dismantled, spectators fined, and actors whipped at the cart's-tail.

Under the *Commonwealth*, all other amusements were treated with like severity, bull-baiting, (because a source of special pleasure to the multitude), being an object of the Puritans' special antipathy and rigor.

Travelling.—There being no canals, and the high-roads being in a most dilapidated and perilous condition, there was very little inter-communication between places. The gentry travelled in their own carriages, with six horses, that number being needful lest the machine should stick in ruts or mire,—goods were conveyed by pack-horses, in trains, or by the heavy stage-waggon, which served as, also, a means of progression for the middle and poorer classes.

Hackney-coaches became numerous in London.

Population,—at the end of the Period was about 5 million. The North was still very sparsely inhabited.

MANUFACTURES, &c.

Woollen,—remained the chief. *That of*

Silk,—greatly increased in importance, the Silk Throwsters Company, (established 1639), employing in 1641 no less than 40,000 persons.

Cotton,—began to be manufactured to some little extent, at Manchester, as seen from the following extract from the "Treasure of Traffic," 1641.—The people of Manchester "buy cotton wool in London, that comes from Cyprus and Smyrna, and at home work the same, and perfect it into fustians, vermilions, dimities, and other such stuffs, and

then return it to London, where the same is vented and sold, and not seldom sent into foreign parts, who have means at far easier terms to provide themselves of the said first materials."

Iron-smelting,—by means of coal, was *discovered*, by "*Dud*" *Dudley*, an illegitimate son of the Earl of Dudley, the secret, however, dying, for a time, with him. For awhile, under the new process, the iron manufacture began to assume a flourishing aspect.

Linen,—was, chiefly, spun and woven, by females, at home, for their own households.

COMMERCE, &c.

The *foundation* of our *Navigation Laws* was *laid*, by the celebrated

Navigation Act, Oct. 9, 1641.

Articles :—

1. No goods, or commodities, whatever, of the growth, or manufacture of Asia, Africa, or America, to be imported into England, Ireland, or the Plantations, except directly in ships belonging to English subjects, and of which the master and the greater number of the crew were English.

2. No goods, or commodities, grown, produced, or manufactured, in any other country of Europe, to be imported into Great Britain except in British ships, or in such ships as are the real property of the people of the country, or place, wherein the goods were produced, or from which they could be, or most usually were, exported.

This Act, by securing, almost entirely, the import trade from Asia, Africa, America, and Europe, to British ships, *struck*, (as was intended), *a death-blow at the carrying trade of the Dutch*, who had hitherto almost monopolized that of the world,—*and transferred it to Britain*, whose *mighty commercial growth* may be justly attributed to this measure.

This growth was rapid and steady from the date of the passing of the Act.

The various Trading Companies flourished, in the main, the great exception being the

East India Company, whose trade dwindled, owing to the unsatisfactory state of its affairs. This corporation having bought land, founded **Madras**.

The North American plantations grew, owing to the expatriation of the Puritans, and, on the whole, prospered, Virginia, especially, owing to its extensive tobacco cultivation.

COINAGE

Underwent considerable variations, owing to political changes. Charles I., during the course of the Civil War, issued a large quantity of money on his own account, the nominal value of the coins greatly exceeding their sterling worth.

INTEREST,—on money was lowered from 8 to 6% in 1651.

There being no banks, the merchants kept their money at the Mint, until Charles I., in 1640, seized, in name of a loan, £200,000, deposited therein, by them. In 1645, they began to entrust their specie to the goldsmiths, who, thence, speedily, became *de facto* bankers, paying interest on deposits, discounting bills, and lending cash. Under the Commonwealth, these money-brokers lent money to Government, to be repaid on receipt of the regular revenue.

AGRICULTURE, &c.

Some few alterations took place in farming, amongst them being the introduction of turnip husbandry, and increased cultivation of clover in meadows.

In gardening, immense progress was made. A writer of the Period states that in 1650, there were living old people who remembered the first gardener coming into Surrey, to plant cabbages, and cauliflowers, and sow turnips, carrots, parsnips, and early-ripe peas, all of which were brought from Holland, and Flanders. By the just-mentioned year, cherries, apples, pears, and hops, (previously scantily cultivated), were grown so extensively as to obviate the necessity for importing them.

LITERATURE.

The Period is distinguished by its richness in *Theology*, *Ethics*, and *Controversial Politics*.

In the Drama,—the grand and massive plays of Shakespeare and his compeers were followed by lighter and feebler productions, especially *Masques*.

In Poetry,—Milton, stands alone, as the poet of the time. His contemporaries were, mainly, mere elegant trifling versifiers. In some of them, we see *traces* of the coming *Artificial School*.

Prose—was largely affected by the introduction, owing to increased study of the Classics, of immense numbers of words derived from the *Latin and Greek*, very many being transferred without change.

The works of Jeremy Taylor, and Sir Thomas Brown, alone, contain 3000 words of classic origin which have not taken root in the language.

Newspapers,—vastly increased in number, and importance. The first English journal that has been discovered is a quarto pamphlet, containing, in a few leaves, a summary of the year's Parliamentary proceedings, and entitled "The Diurnal Occurrences, or Daily Proceedings of Both Houses, in this great and happy Parliament, from the 3rd of November, 1640, to the 3rd of November, 1641."

From this date, onward to the King's execution, over one hundred different journals were issued, the times of publication increasing, as the interest in affairs deepened, from once, to twice, or thrice, a week, and, even, to every day, (Spalding, an Aberdeen chronicler, recording that daily papers came from London as early as 1642). From Charles's death to the Restoration, at least 80 more sprang into existence.

Pamphlets,—too, were issued in vast numbers, 30,000 being calculated to have appeared from the opening of the Long Parliament to the Restoration.

EDUCATION.

Classics were more than ever the prominent and engrossing study in the Universities and schools. Science began to receive some attention.

Female education retrograded.

SCIENCE

Made comparatively little advance.

Astronomy,—Horrocks first observed the transit of Venus. 1641.

THE FINE ARTS.

Painting.—England possessed no native artists of distinction, and Rubens and Vandyke, the two foreigners whom Charles I. patronized, died in, respectively, 1640, and 1641. Thus, this branch was barren during the Period.

After his beheading, the fine gallery which the King, (who had been a most generous Art patron), had collected was broken up, the Puritan leaders selling most of the pictures. To his lasting honor, Cromwell bought-in Raffaele's fine "Cartoons," and presented them to the nation.

Sculpture,—was in the same melancholy condition as Painting.

Engraving,—was much cultivated, though no British name is distinguished. Hollar, a Bohemian, (who came to England under Charles I., fled to the Continent during the Civil War, and returned 1652), was the chief artist in this department: his industry was superlative.

Messotint was, it is said, invented by Prince Rupert, through noticing the effect of the dew on the lock of a sentinel's gun.

Architecture,—shewed a steady advance in the "modern" path opened out by Inigo Jones, under James I.

Music,—was much cultivated under Charles I., but fell into disfavor under the Puritan *régime*, (which, indeed, was, generally speaking, hostile to every branch of Art). Cromwell, however, enlightened beyond his fellows, was extremely fond of instrumental music, paying an organist £100 *per annum*, and frequently having concerts at his house.

CELEBRATED PERSONS.

Authors.

POETS, AND DRAMATISTS.

Phineas Fletcher, 1584-1650.—Cousin of Fletcher, the dramatist,—incumbent of Hilgay, Norfolk.

Chief Work.—*The Purple Island*,—an imaginative allegorical poem, describing the body and mind of man.

William Drummond, 1585-1649.—"of Hawthornden," (where he was born, and resided), near Edinburgh,—

greatly affected by the Civil War, Charles's execution precipitating his own death,—the chief Scotch poet of his time.

Chief Works.—Poems,—mostly out of the Period,—marked by thoughtfulness, brilliancy of imagination, elegance, and harmony; *The History of the Five Jameses*,—prose.

Geo. Wither, 1588-1667.—Born in Hampshire,—educated at Oxford,—joined the Parliamentary cause, and raised a troop of cavalry on its behalf,—taken prisoner, saved by Denham from execution, released, and became Major-General under Cromwell,—at the Restoration, lost all, and was imprisoned,—released, after three years' confinement.

A prolific writer, and generally placed amongst the Puritan poets.

Chief Works.—*Abuses Stript and Whipt*,—a poetical satire, which procured for him a somewhat long imprisonment; *Emblems*; *Prison Lays*.

All his poems are distinguished by naturalness, grace, and sweetness.

Robert Herrick, 1591-1674.—Born in London,—educated at Cambridge,—became vicar of Dean Prior, Devon,—during the Civil War lost his living, came to London, dropped the "Rev.," and lived a convivial life,—at the Restoration, returned to his living.

Works.—*Noble Numbers, or, Pious Pieces*; *Hesperides, or the Works of Robert Herrick, Esqr.*

His secular poems are chiefly lyric, and are marked by graceful fancy, sparkling joyousness, vigor of expression, and indelicacy. Amongst the brightest, and best known, are *To Daffodils*; and "*Gather the Rosebuds While ye May.*"

Francis Quarles, 1592-1644.—Born near Romford,—educated at Cambridge,—studied Law,—became Cup-bearer to the Queen of Bohemia, secretary to Usher, and Chronologer of the City of London (i.e., City-poet),—embraced the Royalist cause, and died worn out by the persecution of the Parliamentary party.

Chief Work.—*Emblems*,—short poems conveying moral lessons, and illustrated by quaint cuts.

His style is energetic; but his productions are marked by fantastic conceits.

James Shirley, 1594-1666.—Born in London,—educated at Oxford,—became curate, near St. Albans,—

renounced Protestantism, and turned play-writer,—burnt out by the Great Fire,—himself and his wife died the same day.

Works.—Dramas.—(39 in all), (*The Gamester* the best),—smoothly and elegantly written, and free from indelicacy ; but want vigor, tenderness, and wit ; Poems,—Miscellaneous minor pieces.

Richard Crashaw, 1602-1650.—Son of a Preacher at the Temple,—educated at the Charterhouse, and Cambridge,—became a Roman Catholic priest, and Canon.

Works.—*Steps to the Temple ; Delights of the Muses ;* Poetical Translations ; and other original poems,—marked by richness of imagination, brilliancy of expression, and elegant versification ; but marred by conceits.

Sir William Davenant, 1605-1668.—Born at Oxford,—son of a vintner,—succeeded Jonson, as Poet-Laureate,—a stanch Royalist,—retired to France, when Charles's cause was ruined,—embarked for Virginia, the ship falling into the hands of the Parliamentarians,—was sent to the Tower, where he remained two years, until liberated by Milton's intercession,—at the Restoration, became theatrical manager, greatly improving the stage, and introducing moveable scenery, and actresses.

Chief Work.—*Gondibert*,—a monotonous, unfinished, heroic romance.

Edmund Waller, 1605-1687.—Born at Coleshill, Warwick,—of a high and wealthy family,—cousin of John Hampden,—entered Parliament at 18, and espoused the popular cause,—joined in a Royalist conspiracy to deliver London into Charles's hands, 1643, was tried, fined £10,000, and imprisoned,—released,—lived for some time in France,—returned,—celebrated Cromwell's death, and the Restoration,—sat in all Charles's Parliaments.

Works.—Poems,—mostly lyrical and amatory,—distinguished for smoothness, elegance, and melody ; but deficient in imagination : that on *Cromwell* is the most vigorous.

John Milton, 1608-1674.—*Poet, Dramatist, Political Writer, Theologian, Historian, Logician, and Grammarian.*—Born in Bread Street, Cheapside, London,—son of a money-scrivener, whose father had disowned him, for renouncing Roman Catholicism,—educated at St. Paul's, and at Cambridge, where he entered at 17, and where he is said, (without sufficient authority), to have suffered flagel-

lation, and rustication, for quarrelling with his tutor,—took his M.A.,—was intended for the Church, but was deterred from it, by conscientious scruples,—spent 5 years at Horton, his father's country house, in Bucks, where he wrote his earlier poems,—travelled on the Continent, visiting, amongst other great men, Galileo, who was then a prisoner of the Inquisition, at Florence,—on his return, established a school, in London, and commenced his prose writings, throwing himself into the thick of ecclesiastical and political controversy,—obtained, through his *Tenure of Kings and Magistrates*, the post of Latin Secretary to the Government, (Latin being then the diplomatic language),—in 1653, became totally blind, owing to hereditary weakness, and over-study in youth, and was assisted, first by Meadows, and then by Marvell, in his Secretaryship,—at the Restoration, was in concealment and danger; but was included in the Act of Indemnity, through the influence of Davenant, who thus returned the kindness formerly done him by the poet,—spent the last years of his life in lowly seclusion, and quiet,—buried in St. Giles's, Cripplegate.

Milton was thrice married,—

1. To *Mary Powell*, daughter of a Royalist gentleman, who deserted his (for her) too quiet home, for two years. She left three daughters, who were taught to read several foreign languages without understanding them, and without knowing their own: they proved “undutiful and unkind” to their father.
2. To *Catherine Woodcock*, who died fifteen months after marriage.
3. To *Elizabeth Minshull*, who tenderly nursed his declining years.

Works of the Period.—*Of Reform in England; Prelatical Episcopacy; Apology for Smectymnus*,—a defence of himself, and 5 Puritan ministers who had supported him in his attacks on Church abuses. “*Smectymnus*” is formed of the initials of these divines,—Stephen Marshall, Edward Calamy, Thomas Young, Mathew Newcome, W(U)illiam Spenstowe; *On Divorce*,—4 treatises,—owed their origin to his first wife's desertion; *Areopagitica, a Speech for the Liberty of Unlicensed Printing*,—addressed to the Long Parliament, in consequence of their issuing an order making more stringent the censorship of the Press,—the most

eloquent of Milton's prose works ; *Tractate on Education ; The Tenure of Kings and Magistrates*,—written in defence of Charles's execution ; *Eikonoklastes* (=the image breaker),—written in reply to *Ikon Basilike* ; *Defensio pro Populo Anglicano*,—asserting the liberties of the people, against the divine right of Kings ; *Defensio Secunda*.

Milton's prose writings are marked by profound and varied scholarship, masculine logic, felicitous and quaint illustrations, and gorgeous eloquence,—being, as Macaulay says, “a perfect field of cloth of gold.” They are, however, too Latinized in style, and frequently present lamentable falls “from the sublime to the ridiculous,” a peculiarity distinguishing, also, the works and speeches of his contemporaries.

None of Milton's dramatic works or poems belong to this Period : he had, however, commenced the composition of *Paradise Lost* in 1658.

Sir John Denham, 1615-1668.—Born in Dublin,—son of the Chief Baron of the Irish Exchequer,—educated at Oxford,—studied Law,—gambled away his fortune,—took the Royalist side,—at the Restoration, was knighted, and made Surveyor of Royal Buildings,—“the founder of local poetry.”

Chief Work.—*Cooper's Hill*.—The poet, supposed to be standing on this hill, near Windsor, describes the surrounding scenery, and a stag-hunt, and records the reflections induced by the objects that meet his sight.

It exhibits just thought, and vigor and harmony of language and versification. It acquired for the author a high reputation, Pope styling him “majestic Denham.”

Abraham Cowley, 1618-1667.—Born in London,—son of a stationer,—educated at Westminster, Cambridge, and Oxford,—espoused the Royalist cause,—accompanied Queen Henrietta to France, and there acted as her Secretary, for twelve years,—at the Restoration, expected preferment, but was disappointed, his loyalty being suspected,—at length, obtained a pension of £300, and spent his last years in repose, at Chertsey,—a prominent member of the Royal Society.

Works of the Period.—Miscellaneous Poems ; Essays,—written in pure, nervous English : that on *Cromwell* is the best.

Johnson calls Donne, Crashaw, and Cowley, the “meta-

physical poets," because "for direct thought and natural imagery, they substitute conceits, and remote, often merely verbal, analogies."

It would be more correct to term them "*fantastic* poets." Cowley most fully exhibits the faults of the school.

Richard Lovelace, 1618-1658.—Nobly born,—one of the gayest of the Cavalier lyrists,—being disappointed in love, gave himself up to dissipation,—died a beggar, in a London lane.

Works.—*Odes, Sonnets, and Songs*,—published during an imprisonment he suffered, at the close of the Civil War.

Alexander Brown, 1620-1666.—An attorney,—a prominent and witty Royalist,—author of some of the best lampoons on the Rump Parliament,—is said to have hastened the Restoration, by his songs.

Chief Works.—*Diurnal and Political Satires*; Convivial and amatory lyrics.

Andrew Marvell, 1620-1678.—Born in Lincolnshire, son of the Reader at Trinity Church, Hull,—educated at Cambridge,—became, successively, *attaché* of the English Embassy, at Constantinople, tutor in the families of Lord Fairfax and a gentleman named Dutton, and Assistant Latin Secretary to Milton, whose friendship he had gained abroad,—M.P. for Hull, from the Restoration to his death,—one of the last paid members of the Commons,—refused a large bribe from Charles II.,—died so suddenly as to excite suspicions of poison, which were strengthened by the Court forbidding his constituents to erect a monument to him.

Chief Works.—*Whimsical Satire on Holland*,—a quaintly humorous poem; *Miscellaneous Pieces*,—one of the best being *The Emigrants in the Bermudas*. His poems are marked by delicacy of feeling and expression; *Account of the Growth of Popery and Arbitrary Government in England*,—one of the most trenchant political pamphlets of the day. His prose is vigorous, incisive, and caustic.

HISTORIANS AND POLITICAL WRITERS.

James Usher, 1581-1656.—Born in Dublin,—Archbp. of Armagh,—driven from Ireland by the Rebellion in 1641,—died at Reigate, Surrey,—a stanch Royalist.

Chief Works.—*The Power of the Prince and the Obedience of the Subject*; *Annals*,—a chronological compendium of

history; *Chronologia Sacra*,—investigates the chronology of the Scriptures.

John Selden, 1584-1654.—Born in Sussex,—educated at Oxford,—studied Law,—became steward (and perhaps husband) of the Countess of Kent,—entered Parliament, and espoused the popular cause,—M.P. for Oxford, in the Long Parliament, which he greatly influenced, and aided by his knowledge of Constitutional Law, having a great share in drawing up the *Petition of Right*,—represented by Milton, and Clarendon, as the most learned man of the age.

Chief Works.—*On Titles of Honour; Idols of the Syrians; The History of Tithes; Mare Clausum*,—a reply to Grotius, on the dominion of the sea; *Table Talk*,—a collection of his wisest and raciest sayings, which his secretary recorded, and published after Selden's death.

Isaac Walton, 1593-1683.—Born at Stafford,—married the sister of Bishop Ken, and thus became acquainted with many of the most eminent men of the day,—made a fortune, as a London linen-draper, and retired, at 50, to spend his last 40 years in angling, and literary pursuits.

Works.—*The Complete Angler, or, the Contemplative Man's Recreation*,—recommending the country, and celebrating the virtues of angling,—mostly in the form of a dialogue, between an angler and a student,—abounds in poetic pictures of country life, has a vein of mellow moral wisdom running through it, and at the same time contains invaluable technical directions for the use of the rod,—racily quaint in style; *Lives of Donne, Wotton, Hooker, Herbert, and Bishop Sanderson*,—most valuable for their facts, and unique as biographies on account of their characteristic manner.

Thomas May, 1575-1650.

Work.—*History of the Parliament of 1640*, (of which he was Secretary),—a clear and honest account of the causes of the Civil War.

Peter Heylin, 1600-1662.—Chaplain to Charles I.,—deprived of preferment by Parliament,—reinstated by Charles II.

Works.—*A Short View*,—a Royalist sketch of contemporary events; *Life of Laud*.

John Gauden, 1605-1662.—Born in Essex,—educated at Cambridge,—at the Restoration, became, successively, Bishop of Exeter, and of Worcester.

Work.—*Ikon Basilike; or, the Portraiture of His Most Sacred Majesty in his Solitude and Sufferings*,—appeared a few days after Charles's execution, and in his name. It is certain, however, that Gauden was the author, for he afterwards wrote to Clarendon pleading the work as his claim to preferment.

Bulstrode Whitelock, 1605-1676.—Born in London,—Member for Great Marlow, Bucks, in the Long Parliament,—espoused the popular cause, but, like Selden, was opposed to civil war,—member, and afterwards President, of the Council of State,—Speaker of the Parliament of 1656,—one of Cromwell's Lords, and Keeper of the Great Seal.

Work.—*Memorials*,—anti-Royalist contemporary records.

Thomas Fuller, 1608-1661.—Born at Aldwinkle, (Northamptonshire),—educated at Cambridge,—became a popular London preacher,—was made, successively, prebend of Salisbury, rector of Broad Windsor, Lecturer at the Savoy, and Chaplain to Chas. I.,—at the breaking out of the Civil War, became army-chaplain,—defended Basing Hall against Waller,—settled again as lecturer, at St. Bride's, London, but compelled to cease preaching,—passed the *Triers*, (a board appointed by the Parliament to examine pulpit candidates), and entered on the rectory of Waltham Abbey, presented to him by the Earl of Carlisle,—at the Restoration, regained his former offices, and would have been made a bishop, but for his sudden death.

Works.—*Worthies of England*,—lives of eminent Englishmen, interspersed with all kinds of information about the spots connected with their names. The materials he gathered while moving from place to place with the army; *History of the Holy War: Holy and Profane State; Good Thoughts in Bad Times; Good Thoughts in Worse Times; Mixed Contemplations in Better Times*.

Fuller's works are a marvellous concentration of quaint wit and practical wisdom. The style is careless, and intensely Euphuistic.

Edward Hyde, Earl of Clarendon, 1608-1674.—Born at Dinton, Wilts,—educated at Oxford, for the Church, but renounced his intention, and studied Law,—gained a large practice at the bar,—M.P. for Wootton Bassett, in the Long Parliament,—espoused Charles's cause, and aided him materially with his advice, and with assistance in

drawing up papers,—was knighted, and made Chancellor of the Exchequer,—on the outbreak of the Civil War, accompanied Prince Charles abroad, and shared his exile,—at the Restoration, was made Speaker in the Upper House, and Lord Chancellor, and created Earl of Clarendon,—quickly became unpopular,—urged, by Charles II., to resign, to escape prosecution, but refused, whereupon Charles deprived him of the Great Seal, and ordered him to leave the country,—expired abroad, at Rouen. His daughter, Anne Hyde, was Jas. II.'s first wife.

Chief Work.—*History of the Great Rebellion*,—written during exile,—not within the Period.

There is a remarkable similarity in the lives of Clarendon and Milton, the greatest literary men, respectively, of the Royalists and Parliamentarians. They were born in the same year,—educated with a view to the Church,—occupied, each in his own sphere, a position of eminent influence and honor,—were suddenly plunged into obscurity and adversity,—produced their noblest works in these their last and saddest years,—and died within a few days of each other.

THEOLOGICIANS, &c.

Edmund Calamy, 1600-1666.—Educated at Cambridge,—driven from the Church, for refusing to publish the Book of Sports,—one of Milton's associates in writing against Church abuses,—one of the heroic band of ministers who remained in London during the Plague.

Works.—Sermons, and Theological treatises.

John Pearson, 1612-1687.—Master of Trinity, Cambridge,—Bp. of Chester.

Chief Work.—*Exposition of the Creed*,—one of the finest theological treatises in the language, and the best on the subject.

Robert Leighton, 1613-1684.—Scotchman,—of Puritan parentage,—educated at Edinburgh,—lived for some time in France,—returned, and settled, as Presbyterian minister, near Edinburgh,—seceded to the Episcopalian side,—was made, successively, Principal of Edinburgh University, Bishop of Dunblane, and Archbishop of Glasgow, which post he filled, for a short time, against his will, and, finally, abandoned, owing to his disapproval of Charles's endeavouring to thrust Episcopacy on Scotland,—spent his last years in retirement, in England.

Works.—*Lectures* (in Latin),—delivered at Edinburgh University; *Commentary on 1 Peter*,—learned, and eloquent.

Jeremy Taylor, 1613-1667.—"the Spenser of theological literature."—Born at Cambridge,—son of a barber,—educated at the University of his native City, where he entered as a sizar,—preaching in London, attracted the attention of Laud, by whose influence he became, successively, Fellow of All Souls', Oxford, and Rector of Uppingham, Rutlandshire,—espoused the Royalist cause, and became army-chaplain,—captured by the Roundheads, near Cardigan, but soon released,—his living being sequestrated, under the Commonwealth, retired to Wales, where he established a school, and married Mrs. Bridges, (an illegitimate daughter of Chas. I.), who had a small estate, which did not, however, bring in much, since Taylor was for years partially supported by John Evelyn, and the Earl of Carbery,—during this time, was twice imprisoned, for attacks on the Puritan party,—preached, for a time, to an Episcopalian congregation in London,—became, at the request of the Earl of Conway, Preacher at Lisburn Church,—at the Restoration, was made Bishop of Down and Connor, to which see that of Dromore was afterwards added,—died of fever, at Lisburn.

Works.—*Defence of Episcopacy; Liberty of Prophesying* (=preaching),—recommending toleration of differences of belief on all doctrines not contained in the Apostles' Creed,—the most advanced defence of religious toleration that had yet appeared; *Holy Living; Holy Dying; Ductor Dubitantium*,—a work on casuistry; *Sermons*.

Taylor's works are distinguished by profound and varied scholarship, and opulence of fancy and diction. His great fault is that he so crowds his periods with images and quotations that the train of thought is perpetually broken and lost. His imagery, however, though excessive, is exquisitely beautiful, being mostly derived from nature. The influence of his classical studies is seen in his Latinized language.

Richard Baxter, 1615-1691.—Born at Rowdon, Salop,—educated at Wroxeter Free School, and, privately, at Ludlow,—had no college training,—ordained by the Bishop of Worcester,—became, successively, master of Dudley Grammar School, curate of Bridgenorth, and vicar of Kid-

derminster, where he laboured, with apostolic zeal, for 16 years,—sided, on the whole, with the Parliament, and was for a time, chaplain in their army, but was compelled, by illness, to resign,—at the Restoration, was offered, and declined, a bishopric,—driven, by the Act of Uniformity, from the Church, and suffered severely from the penal statutes against Nonconformists,—arraigned, on a charge of sedition, before Jeffreys, who scurrilously abused him, silenced his counsel, and procured a conviction,—was heavily fined, and, in default, sent to prison, where he remained 18 months,—spent his last years in peace.

Chief Works.—*The Reformed Pastor; The Saints' Everlasting Rest; Call to the Unconverted; Narrative of the Most Memorable Passages of Life and Times* (posthumous),—truthful.

Baxter's works would fill over sixty octavo volumes, and, yet, all were produced in spite of great constitutional weakness and chronic illness. His style is vigorous, and direct, and so clear that there is never any mistaking his meaning.

John Owen, 1616-1683.—Born at Stadham, Oxon,—son of a clergyman,—educated at Oxford, but left prematurely, on account of scruples of conscience, and repugnance to Laud's new laws for the University,—presented, by Parliament, to, successively, the livings of Fordham, and Cogleshall, in Essex,—rose high in favour with Cromwell, who took him to Ireland, (where he re-modelled Trinity College), and made him Dean of Christ's Church, and Vice-Chancellor of the University of Oxford, which post he filled till his patron's death,—at the Restoration, was offered, and declined, a bishopric,—became Congregational minister, to a church in London.

Chief Works.—*Exposition of the Hebrews; Discourse on the Holy Spirit; Meditation on the Glory of Christ.*

His works are marked by deep thought, power of reasoning, profound learning, and great devoutness; but the style is ungraceful and obscure.

George Fox, 1624-1690.—Born at Drayton, Leicestershire,—founder of Quakerism.

Works.—Doctrinal Pieces; Journals; Letters.

PHILOSOPHICAL WRITERS.

Lord Edward Herbert, 1581-1648.—Eldest brother of George Herbert,—born at Eyton, Salop,—ambassador to France,—created Lord Herbert of Cherbury, Salop, by Charles I.,—espoused the cause, first of the Parliament, then of the King.

Chief Work.—*De Veritate*.

He denies divine revelation ; and believes that natural instinct supplies five axioms, comprehending all that is necessary in religious belief, and found in all the religious systems of the world.

Thomas Hobbes, 1588-1679.—Born at Malmesbury,—educated at Oxford,—travelling tutor to two successive Earls of Devonshire,—espoused the Royalist cause,—at the outbreak of the Civil War, retired to Paris, and became tutor to Prince Charles,—at the Restoration, received a pension, and spent the remainder of his life at Chatsworth.

Chief Works.—*Leviathan, or the Matter, Form, and Power, of the Commonwealth ; Letters on Liberty and Necessity*.

His doctrines are, in many respects, subversive of religion, morals, and liberty, (*e.g.*, his view that virtue is the fruit of pure selfishness).

At the same time, his writings contain very much that is of preëminent value, (*e.g.*, his views of the Association of Ideas, of Necessity, and of Language) ; *Behemoth, or the History of the Civil War*, from 1640 to 1660, (posthumous).

(The titles "*Leviathan*," and "*Behemoth*," were chosen to indicate his belief that the people were a species of huge, awkward, and intractable, brute).

Hobbes's style is clearer than that of any metaphysical writer : his meaning is always apparent and unmistakable.

Ralph Cudworth, 1617-1688.—Regius Professor of Hebrew, at Cambridge.

Chief Work.—*The True Intellectual System of the Universe*,—proving the existence of one supreme Deity.

MISCELLANEOUS WRITERS.

Joseph Hall, 1574-1656,—"the English Seneca."—Bishop of Norwich.

Chief Work.—*Meditations*,—imaginative, witty, wise, and pointed, essays.

John Earle, 1600-1665.—Born at York,—educated at Oxford,—became Chaplain to Prince Charles, and Chancellor of Salisbury,—companion of Charles's exile,—after Restoration, rose to be Bishop of Salisbury.

Chief Work.—*Microcosmography, or, a Piece of the World Discovered, in Essays and Characters*,—very shrewd, and witty.

Sir Thomas Browne, 1605-1682.—Physician at Norwich.

Chief Works.—*Religio Medici; Pseudodoxia Epidemica* (= *Vulgar Errors*); *Hydriotaphia* (= *Urn Burial*).

Browne's language is, like Taylor's, ponderously Latinized.

DIVINES, (not distinguished as authors).

William Laud, 1578-1645.—Son of a clothier, at Reading, at whose Free School, and St. John's, Oxford, he was educated,—entered the Church, and, under James I., became Royal Chaplain; Prebend of Westminster; and Bishop of Worcester,—became very influential on the accession of Charles, who translated him to, first Bath and Wells, and then London,—elected Chancellor of his University, of which he was a great benefactor,—went to Scotland, with Charles, on occasion of the latter's coronation there, and, on his return, became Archbishop of Canterbury, and Chancellor of Dublin University, holding, also, numerous civil posts,—a High Churchman, and believer in the Divine right of Kings, became one of Charles's main instruments of tyranny, especially in thrusting episcopacy on the Scotch, and laboring to compel conformity, and crush the Puritans,—using, as his chief engine of oppression, the Star Chamber, and the High Commission Court,—impeached, by the Long Parliament, for high treason, and sent to the Tower, where he lay for three years, until his

Trial, March-Novr., 1644, before the Lords, the following being the

Charges.—

1. Designing to subvert the subjects' liberty and religion.

2. Being the author of all the illegal and tyrannical proceedings in the Star Chamber and the High Commission Court.

3. Making innovations in doctrine and discipline, and suppressing godly ministers and preaching,—made a spirited defence, and was acquitted, whereupon the Commons passed a bill of attainder, declaring him guilty of high treason, which they forced the Peers to pass,—beheaded, on Tower Hill, Jan. 10, meeting his end with perfect composure and dignity,—author of Sermons, and other productions,—has had his character depicted variously, and in the most opposite colors, the fairest estimate being, it would appear, that of *May*, “A man vigilant enough, of an active, or, rather, of a restless mind; more ambitious to undertake than politic to carry on; of a disposition too fierce and cruel for his coat; which, notwithstanding he was so far from concealing in a subtle way, that he increased the envy of it by his insolence. He had few vulgar and private vices, as being neither taxed by covetousness, intemperance, nor incontinence, and, in a word, *a man not altogether so bad in his personal character as unfit for the state of England.*”

William Juxon, 1582-1663.—Born at Chichester,—educated at Merchant Taylors’, and at Oxford,—entered the Church,—patronized by Laud, whose influence procured him the see of, first Hereford, and then London,—became Lord High Treasurer of England, (a post which no churchman had occupied since the reign of Henry VIII.), to the great disgust of the Puritans, resigning the post, however, after six years’ blameless discharge of its duties,—adhered faithfully to Charles I., sharing his captivity in the Isle of Wight, and, (as elsewhere narrated), attending him on the scaffold,—imprisoned by the Parliament, for refusing to tell them the subject of his last conversation with the King, but soon released,—lived, then, in privacy, till the Restoration, when he was made Archbishop of Canterbury.

LAWYER.

Sir Matthew Hale, 1609-1676.—Born at Alderley, Gloucestershire,—educated at Oxford,—entered Lincoln’s Inn, where he was a diligent student, and overcame very dissipated habits formerly indulged,—during the Civil War, acted the part of a “trimmer,” defending Strafford, Laud, Hamilton, and even the King, yet escaping the hostility of the Parliament, and, becoming, by Cromwell’s

entreaty, one of the Judges of King's Bench,—never formally acknowledged the Protector, and, at length, refused to try any more criminal political causes,—sat for Gloucestershire, in the Convention Parliament,—at the Restoration, became Baron of Exchequer, and, then, Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench, whence he retired the year before his decease,—“a learned man, an upright judge, and an exemplary Christian,” his only apparent fault being a certain weakness of character, shewn in his undecided attitude during the Civil War, and in his belief in witchcraft, for which he condemned two women to death !

POLITICAL CHARACTERS.

Thomas Wentworth, Earl of Strafford, 1593-1641

—Son of Sir William Wentworth, the representative of a wealthy Yorkshire house, dating from the Conquest,—born in London,—educated at St. John's, Cambridge,—married Margaret, daughter of the Earl of Cumberland, 1611,—was knighted, and, then, travelled,—elected, 1614, M.P. for Yorkshire, which county he represented in several parliaments, and, for a number of years steadily supported the popular party, not coming forward prominently, however, in its behalf, till after the accession of Charles I.,—in 1627, refused to pay a forced loan, and was, therefor, imprisoned, having, previously, been appointed Sheriff of his county, in order to prevent his being elected its representative, and, thus, to get rid of an able opponent of the Crown,—re-elected for Yorkshire, 1628, and stood forth boldly against the public grievances, but, later on in the year, influenced by ambition, accepted the overtures of the Court, and went over to the Government, becoming, in recompense, Baron Wentworth,—rose, speedily, to be Viscount, Lord President of the Council of the North, and Privy Councillor,—shewed, in his government of the North, the most shameless disregard of the national liberties, exercising the most arbitrary rule, and acting in direct violation of the Petition of Right,—anxious to put in practice his system of rule, (which he denominated, as applied to that island, “*Thorough*”), without restraint, obtained the post of Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, 1633, and during his viceroyalty, governed as a cruel despot, amongst his worst acts being his raising a standing army, (for

Charles's support against the English patriotic party); his oppression, (and attempted expulsion), of the Ulster Scots who had taken the Covenant; and his bare-faced claim of the whole of Connaught for the Crown, (this last being influential in causing the Rebellion of '41),—benefitted the country, however, by introducing flax culture, and the linen manufacture,—recalled from Ireland 1639, to command against the Scotch, receiving the title of Earl Strafford,—accomplished nothing in the field, owing, greatly, to his not possessing the confidence of the army,—took his seat in the Lords, on the assembling, Novr., 1640, of the Long Parliament, the Commons, Pym leading, immediately impeaching him of high treason, upon which charge he was, forthwith, committed to the Tower,—brought to

TRIAL, MARCH, 1641, before the whole House of Commons, Commissioners from Scotland and Ireland, 80 Peers as judges, and the King and Queen as spectators, Pym leading against him, on the following general,

Charges.—Attempting to subvert

1. The fundamental laws of the Realm, and introduce arbitrary government.

2. True religion, and introduce Popery.

3. The rights of Parliament,—defended himself most ably, against 13 accusers, for 17 days, and found "Guilty," by the Lords, on only two of the *specific charges, viz.,*

1. Raising money by his own authority, (being, as a kind of levying war against the King, substantive treason, under the Act of Edward the III.).

2. Quartering troops on the people of Ireland, to compel obedience to his own unlawful requisitions, in which sentence the judges, on the matter being referred to them, coincided, declaring that he did, therefore, deserve the pains and penalties of high treason by law.

Meanwhile, the Commons, dreading his acquittal, had brought in a Bill of Attainder against him, for which they now abandoned the Impeachment, and which passed, April 21.

Charles, who had promised his favorite his protection, at first refused his consent to the attainder, but, finally, influenced by the popular excitement, the tears of his wife (who hated Strafford), the intriguing sophistries of the

Bishop of Lincoln, set his hand thereto, thus betraying to death his ablest, most unscrupulous, and most faithful tool, who was, accordingly, beheaded, on Tower Hill, May 12, meeting his fate with calm intrepidity.

The substantial justice of Wentworth's sentence is indisputable,—the expedient whereby it was obtained (the Bill of Attainder), merits condemnation.

Strafford was, undoubtedly, one of the greatest men that our country has produced. That his transcendent abilities should have been so wretchedly prostituted is matter for profoundest regret. Had he continued a leader of the popular party, (granting that his life had been spared sufficiently long), no name, (not excepting even Cromwell's), amongst that "glorious company" would, it seems pretty certain, have stood higher in distinction, and honor, than that of the then-would-have-been "Sir Thomas" Wentworth, the Yorkshire patriot.

Macaulay thus writes of Strafford :—

"He was the first Englishman to whom a peerage was a sacrament of infamy, a baptism into the communion of corruption. As he was the earliest of the hateful list, so was he also by far the greatest ; eloquent, sagacious, adventurous, intrepid, ready of invention, immutable of purpose, in every talent which exalts or destroys nations preëminent, the lost archangel, the Satan of the apostasy. He employed all his powers for the purpose of crushing those liberties of which he had been the most distinguished champion. His counsels respecting public affairs were fierce and arbitrary. His correspondence with Laud abundantly proves that government without parliaments, government by the sword, was his favorite scheme. He was angry that even the courts of justice between man and man should be unrestrained by the royal prerogative. . . . In Ireland, where he stood in the place of the king, his practice was in strict accordance with his theory. He set up the authority of the executive government over that of the courts of law."

John Pym, 1584-1643.—Born in Somerset,—educated at Oxford,—studied, and acquired eminence in, the Law,—entered Parliament under James I., and distinguished himself by his opposition to that monarch's arbitrary measures,—partook in the impeachment of Buckingham, 1626,—joined, 1637, those leaders of the popular

party who had determined to emigrate, but was, with them, prevented by Royal Edict,—very active in the “Short Parliament,” 1640,—on the assembling of the “Long Parliament,” procured the impeachment of Strafford, conducting the subsequent prosecution,—one of the “Five Members” whom Charles I. endeavoured to seize, 1642,—appointed Lieutenant of the Ordnance, 1643, a month before death,—after lying several days in public, buried in Westminster Abbey, whence, at the Restoration, the body was exhumed, and buried, with others, in a hole in the adjacent churchyard,—“one of the most able, devoted, and indefatigable, of the popular leaders; cautious, and well-versed in the rights and customs of Parliament; a master of eloquence, and author of most of the decisive measures of his party,”—nicknamed, by the Royalists, “King Pym.”

John Bradshaw, 1586-1659.—Born in Cheshire,—studied, and successfully practised, Law, being entrusted by Parliament with many important prosecutions,—made Chief-Justice of Chester, and, then, Sergeant-at-Law,—acted as President, (sternly, but fairly), of the Court that tried Charles I., receiving, for his services, a handsome pension, and several lucrative posts,—took part in some of the plots against Cromwell,—became, subsequently, President of the Council of State, and a Commissioner of the Great Seal,—a thorough-going Republican,—buried in Westminster Abbey: his body was exhumed, at the Restoration, and hanged in chains, at Tyburn.

John Hampden, 1594-1643.—Born in London,—head of a wealthy family settled in Buckinghamshire before the Conquest, and cousin to Cromwell,—educated at Oxford,—studied Law, but did not practise, leading the life of a private country gentleman till 1625, when he was elected member for Grampound,—joined the popular side, but did not at first take a forward position in debate,—commenced his open opposition to the Court by refusing to contribute to a general forced loan, 1626, whereupon he was imprisoned, but was, speedily, released, unconditionally, taking, thereafter, a very active part in affairs, being several times returned for Wendover, and, finally, for his native county, which he represented in the Long Parliament,—refused to pay “Ship Money,” 1636, in order to bring the question of right to trial, which took place the

ensuing year, and ended, after lasting 13 days, adversely to him,—one of the Members whom Charles I. endeavoured to seize,—at the commencement of the Civil War, raised a body of troops, and commanded under Essex,—proved a brave, skilful, energetic, soldier,—appointed on the Committee of Public Safety, displaying in that capacity high political ability and wisdom,—wounded, in the wrist, by the explosion of his own pistol, in the skirmish at Chalgrove, lock-jaw and death ensuing, at Thame, 6 days later. (The cause of his death was a debated question until his coffin was, some years since, opened). Hampden was one of the ablest of the Parliamentary leaders, and for integrity, honor, and pure unselfish patriotism, had few rivals: he was the darling of his party.

Archibald Campbell, Marquis of Argyle, 1598-1661.

—Made a Lord of Session, 1634, and, four years later, succeeded to the title, (then of Earl),—with other Scotch nobles, sent for to London, 1638, to confer with the King on ecclesiastical matters, and insisted on the necessity for abolishing Episcopacy,—when, speedily, war became imminent, threw in his lot with the Covenanters, after much temporizing,—in 1641, was created, Marquis,—unsuccessful in his military operations, during the Civil War, but, Cromwell joining him, with a large force, obtained the supreme power for himself and his party, “the rigid Churchmen,” who, after the execution of Charles I., supported, (as narrated fully elsewhere), monarchy, in the person of his son,—acted with his party till the Prince’s determination to invade England, when he obtained permission to return home,—on Monk’s invasion, made his submission to the Commonwealth, for which he was, at the Restoration, (after 5 months’ imprisonment), tried, on the charge of treason, found “Guilty,” by the “Drunken Parliament,” on the ground of some letters of his to Monk, (the latter treacherously supplying them), which “could not, by any equitable construction, imply the crime of treason,” and executed, meeting his fate with dignity and firmness.

Oliver Cromwell, April 25, 1599-1658, Septr. 3.—

Born at Huntingdon, where resided his father, Robert Cromwell, (a substantial brewer), younger son of Sir Henry Cromwell, (knighted by Elizabeth, and called, on account of his riches, “the Golden Knight”), son of Sir Thomas

Cromwell, (knighted by Henry VIII., at a tournament, and made one of the visitors of monasteries, being rewarded by considerable Church lands, near Cambridge), originally "Williams," (being son of a servant of Henry VII.'s, representative of an ancient Welsh family), which name he exchanged for that of "Cromwell," on his marrying the sister of the great Earl of Essex, Thomas Cromwell,—said to have been, on his mother's side, connected with the Stuarts,—educated at the Free School of his native place, and at Sidney Sussex, Cambridge, where he entered at 17, and remained but a year, owing to his father's death, on which event his mother determined to send him to London, to study Law, which he did, at Lincoln's Inn, leaving on coming of age, at which period he married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir James Bouchier, of Essex,—is said, by Royalist writers, to have been a profligate debauchee in his early years, which seems not to be correct, considering the fact that he made, after the manner of the Puritans, a profession of religion in public, about the time of his marriage, and that he held the highest possible place in the esteem and confidence of a very wide neighbourly area, as was manifested by his being elected Member for his natal place, 1628,—made his first speech 1629, during a debate concerning the preaching by the High Church clergy, he charging Dr. Alabaster with teaching Popery, at Paul's Cross, and his Bishop with sanctioning his so doing,—quitted Huntingdon for St. Ives, where, leaving the Church of England, he became prominent amongst the Independents,—came, by the death of an uncle, Sir Thomas Stuart, 1636, into possession of property to the amount of £500 *per annum*,—became so influential in the county that he was returned, in opposition to the Court candidates, as the member for Cambridge, to both the Parliaments of 1640,—amongst the first to contribute, personally and by purse, to active resistance against the King,—at the commencement of the Civil War, received a captain's commission from the Earl of Essex, and raised a troop of horse, of which he took the command.

(Particulars of his army reforms, his share in the Civil War, and in after events, up to his death—which occurred during a terrible storm—must be here given, as derived from the various portions of this History, in greater or less detail as circumstances may require).

Melancholy and miserable during the latter part of his life, owing to political worry and care, his failing health, and nervous dread of assassination, (which caused him to wear armour under his clothes, and to constantly change his sleeping room), his gloom and despondency being increased by the death of his favorite daughter, Elizabeth, Lady Claypole, (who spoke solemn home-truths to him, on her death-bed).

In frame, robust and manly, but of singularly homely, (warty), face, and of ungainly manners and address,—slovenly in attire,—unready, uncouth, and muddled, in speech, with, however, the sterling redeeming qualities of sagacity, incisiveness, and energy.

As a statesman, and commander, rarely equalled, and still more rarely, (if ever) excelled, his success in these capacities being attributable to superlative penetration and foresight, wise and prompt decision, and iron determination and colossal energy in execution.

With regard to his faults and failings as a ruler, the following remarks seem exactly to meet the case :—

“That Cromwell was a great man even his enemies have acknowledged ; that he was a good man is open to discussion. His talents for war and government have been allowed by Clarendon, and others unfriendly to him ; they admit, further, that he filled the office of protector with vigor, and reëstablished the influence of England abroad. But they also charge him with hypocrisy and violence, and it is difficult to disprove it, for his false position made craft and despotism necessary for its support. *Southey* writes : ‘No man was so worthy of the station which Cromwell filled, had it not been for the means by which he reached it. He would have governed constitutionally, mildly, mercifully, liberally, if he could have followed the impulses of his own heart, and the wishes of his better mind ; self-preservation compelled him to a severe and suspicious system ; he was reduced at last to govern without a parliament, because, pack and purge them as he might, all that he summoned proved unmanageable ; and because he was a usurper, he became of necessity a despot.’”

Richard Cromwell, 1626-1712.—Born at Huntingdon, where he was educated,—entered at Lincoln’s Inn, but, marrying a Miss Major, of Hursley, Hants, removed into the country, and devoted himself entirely to rural

pursuits,—on his father's becoming Protector, was called upon to take part in politics, entering Parliament, and becoming First Lord of Trade and Navigation,—afterwards Chancellor of Oxford.—(Narrate here his accession, and abdication).—At the Restoration, went abroad, and lived at Paris, and Geneva, by turns,—after 20 years' exile, returned to England, and, settling, under a feigned name, at Cheshunt, Herts, spent the rest of his life in privacy,—“a man of joyous spirit, delighting in simple pleasures,” “meek, temperate, quiet . . . but had not a spirit to succeed his father, or to manage such a perplexed Government.”

MILITARY AND NAVAL COMMANDERS.

Robert Devereux, (Earl of Essex), 1582-1646.—Son of the Earl of Essex whom Elizabeth beheaded,—educated at Eton, and Oxford,—divorced from his Countess, owing to her giving her affections to Carr, Earl of Somerset,—restored to his honors by James I.,—served abroad in the Palatinate and Holland,—returned, and married again, to be again divorced,—leaning to the Presbyterians, joined the popular cause, and, at the outbreak of the Civil War, was made Generalissimo of the Parliamentary forces,—commanded at Edgehill, Reading, and Newbury, and raised the siege of Gloucester,—lost his command, 1645, by the *Self-Denying Ordinance*, which was passed with a view to remove him chiefly, owing to his displaying remarkable indecision.

Robert Blake, 1598-1658.—Born at Bridgewater,—educated at Oxford,—lived in retirement till 1640, when he entered Parliament,—espoused the Parliamentary cause,—at first, was engaged as commander on land, raising his own troop,—bravely aided in the defence of Bristol, and, had it not been for his defying all the enemy's efforts to capture Lymington and Taunton, (of which he was made Governor), and so keeping large bodies of the Royalists in the west, the Parliamentarians would, most likely, have hopelessly lost their cause, within a short time after taking the field. His naval services, however, are so brilliant that they have thrown his previous exploits, (though second to none during the War), into the shade.

Under the Commonwealth, in middle age, and without any naval training, went to sea, commencing his naval

services by chasing Rupert, (see the latter's life), and recovering Guernsey and Jersey, after which he was made Councillor of State.—(Narrate here his share in the Dutch War, under the Commonwealth).—Humbled Portugal, Tuscany, and the Deys on the North African coast.—(Narrate here his achievement at Santa Cruz).—Died of consumption, caused by fatigue and hardships, just as his ship was entering Plymouth Sound, on his return home.

Though he had nothing to do with Charles I.'s execution, had never meddled in political matters, (declaring it his sole business to keep England from being fooled by foreigners), and had raised England to the supremacy of the seas, his body was rudely disinterred from Westminster Abbey,—“of singular uprightness, honesty, and courage, totally free from selfishness and worldly ambition,”—the purest patriot of his party.

John Lambert, ?-1691.—Educated for the Bar, but, espousing the Parliamentary cause, joined the army, distinguishing himself at Marston Moor, Naseby, and other fields, and commanded at *Preston*,—member of the Committee of Safety,—opposed Cromwell's being appointed King, for which he lost his commission, but with a pension of £200.—(Narrate here his share in events from Cromwell's death to his imprisonment, after hopelessly opposing Monk's southward march).—Being excepted from the Act of Indemnity, was tried, and condemned; but, owing to his submissive attitude, was spared, but banished to the Island of Guernsey, where he lived peacefully for the remaining thirty years of his life, amusing himself by flower-growing and -painting.

Charles Fleetwood, ?-1692.—Son of Sir William Fleetwood, one of Charles I.'s household,—took part against the King, commanding a cavalry regiment, and acting as Lieutenant-General at the battle of Worcester,—married Cromwell's daughter, widow of Ireton, whom he succeeded as Lord-Deputy of Ireland.—(Narrate his share in Richard Cromwell's abdication, and subsequent events, to the Restoration).

George Monk, Duke of Albemarle, 1608-1670.—Of old, but reduced, family, being son of Sir Thomas Monk, of Potheridge, Devon,—being a younger son, entered the army as a volunteer, won an ensigncy at Rhé, and served for some time in Holland,—on the breaking out of the war

with Scotland, 1639, obtained a colonelship, and attended Charles I. in both his expeditions to the North,—served in Ireland, on the breaking out of the Rebellion, 1641, his services being so important that he was made Governor of Dublin,—returned to England, with the forces sent over by Ormond to aid the King, and was captured at Nantwich,—sent to the Tower, where he languished till 1646, when he joined the popular party, and was sent to command in Ulster, where he made terms with the rebels, which brought upon him Parliamentary censure,—returned to accompany to Scotland Cromwell, who made him Lieutenant-General, with the chief command there,—distinguished himself at Dunbar, and in the Dutch War, in which he defeated Tromp, off the Texel, (being, like Blake and other captains of the Commonwealth, an amphibious commander).—(Narrate here his share in the Restoration).—Rewarded by Charles II. with a peerage, the Garter, £1000 pension, and a seat in the Privy Council,—for some time, presided over the Admiralty,—commanded, with Rupert, in the Second Dutch War, losing a great battle, off the N. Foreland,—buried in Westminster Abbey,—brave, (daring the Plague itself), cautious, and crafty; and possessing great talents for civil government.

Lucius Cary, Viscount Falkland, 1610-1643.—Son of the 1st Viscount,—born at Burford,—educated at Dublin, and Cambridge,—married, and, possessing a great fortune, devoted himself to study, enjoying the society of the learned men of the day,—left his retirement, to join the expedition to Scotland, 1639, next year entering Parliament,—endeavoured, in vain, in Strafford's trial, to enforce moderation,—though too pure and sensitive for partizanship and for action, at such a juncture, was, through Clarendon's agency, induced to join the Royal cause, becoming Secretary of State,—thenceforth, though attending him, distrusted the King, and sympathized with the cause of freedom, the calamities and distractions of his beloved country breaking his heart,—slain, as a presentiment forewarned him, in the 1st battle of Newbury,—one of the finest and noblest men of his day, who would, doubtless, had he survived, been eventually found ranged on the popular side.

Henry Ireton, 1610-1651.—Born at Attenton, Notts,—educated at Oxford,—studied Law,—joined the Parliamentary army, whose left wing he commanded at Naseby,

—marrying a daughter of Cromwell, rose rapidly,—one of Charles I.'s judges,—succeeded his father-in-law, in the command in Ireland,—took Limerick, and almost subdued the Island, where he died,—buried in Westminster Abbey, his body receiving, at the Restoration, a like fate with those of Cromwell and Bradshaw.

James Butler, Duke of Ormond, 1610-1668.—Born in London,—succeeded to the Earldom of Ormond, 1632,—labored during the Civil War, (as elsewhere narrated), to maintain the Royal authority in Ireland,—on the break-up of the cause, retired to the Continent, and there exerted himself to reëstablish the English Monarchy,—at the Restoration, was created Duke, and was twice Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland,—nearly fell a victim to a plot against him, formed by the infamous Colonel Blood.

James Graham, Marquis of Montrose, 1612-1650.—Son of the 4th Earl of Montrose, whom he succeeded, 1620,—born at Edinburgh,—educated at home, and in France, where he held a commission in the Scotch Guards,—returning home, though a Royalist, joined the Covenanters, in consequence of jealous neglect on Hamilton's part; but deserted his new party, owing to Argyle and Leslie overtopping him, the one in the Senate, the other in the Army.—(Particulars must be here given of his victories, defeat, flight to the Continent—where he refused some good appointments—return, and execution).

Sir Henry Vane, 1612-1662.—Son of a baronet who had been Secretary of State, and Treasurer of the Royal Household,—educated at Westminster, and Oxford,—residing some time at Geneva, came back a republican,—emigrated to America, and became Governor of Massachusetts, but, being involved in religious disputes, returned to England, where he was, shortly, appointed Joint-Treasurer to the Navy,—being elected Member for Hull, took a prominent part on the popular side,—one of the prime-movers of the Solemn League and Covenant, and of the Self-Denying Ordinance,—did not sit on Charles's trial, and resisted Cromwell's policy so strenuously that he was sent to Carisbrook Castle,—afterwards exerted himself to establish a republic,—at the Restoration, was excepted from the Act of Indemnity, sent to the Tower, and, on the ground of having held office under the Commonwealth, condemned capitally for treason, and beheaded,—

"one of the greatest and purest men that ever walked the earth, to adorn and elevate his kind."

Prince Rupert, (or, Robert), of Bavaria, 1619-1682.—3rd son of Frederick, Elector-Palatine, by Elizabeth, daughter of James I.,—owing to family misfortunes, came over to England when a child,—educated for the Army,—commanded a cavalry regiment in the German War,—on the breaking out of the Civil War, joined his Royal uncle, who made him his Generalissimo of the Horse,—commanded at Edgehill, Marston Moor, and Naseby, (as well as at Chalgrove Field, and, twice, Bristol), his mad bravery having much to do with the result of these engagements,—very unpopular, being haughty and overbearing towards the higher classes, and displaying the most wanton cruelty in beating up disaffected districts,—dismissed by Charles, after his surrender of Bristol,—put in command, 1648, of that part of the English fleet which deserted to Holland, and sailed to Ormond's assistance,—blockaded, by Blake, in Kinsale, but escaped to Malaga, whither Blake chased him, destroying several of his ships,—got off, with the remainder, and fortified himself in the Scilly Isles, which Blake took,—finally, fled to the W. Indies, with a few ships, and embraced a pirate-life,—returning to Europe, on the death of his brother and partner, Prince Maurice, sold his vessels to France,—at the Restoration, returned to England, and was made Vice-Admiral,—distinguished himself greatly in the Dutch War, after which he retired into private life, amusing himself with scientific pursuits,—invented "Prince's metal" and mezzotint engraving, improved gunpowder, and discovered a method of fusing blacklead,—an active member of the Board of Trade, and instrumental in establishing the Hudson's Bay Company, of which he was Governor.

John Harrison, ?-1660.—Son of a butcher,—joined the Parliamentarian army, wherein he became Colonel, by sheer force of bravery and energy,—chosen to bring Charles I. from the Isle of Wight to London,—one of the King's judges,—executed, as a regicide, at the Restoration, dying with rare fortitude,—rough, uncouth, and illiterate ; but of truly noble character, and profoundly religious.

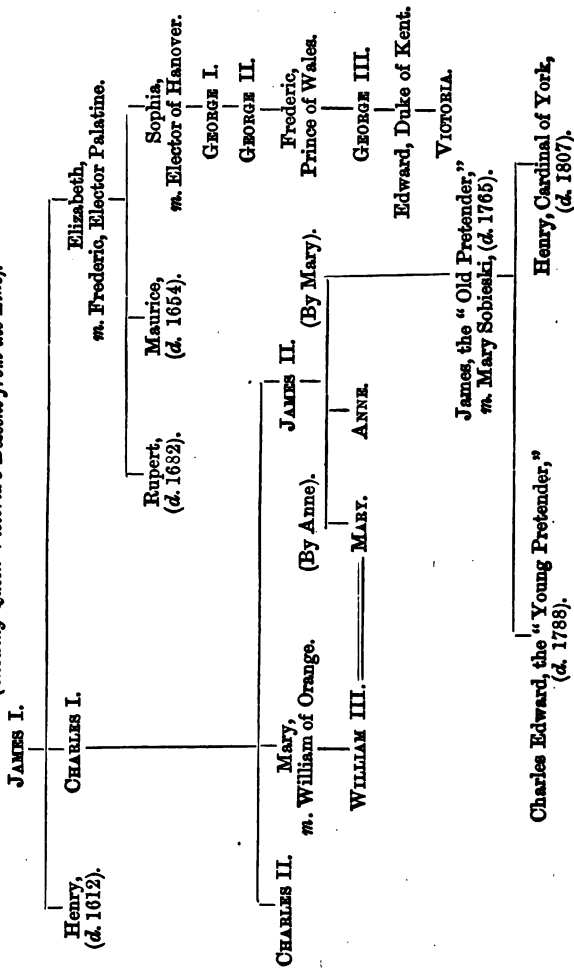
Thomas, Lord Fairfax, ?-1671.—Eldest son of Lord Fairfax, whom he succeeded 1648,—actively espoused the popular cause, and obtained a command in the Parliamen-

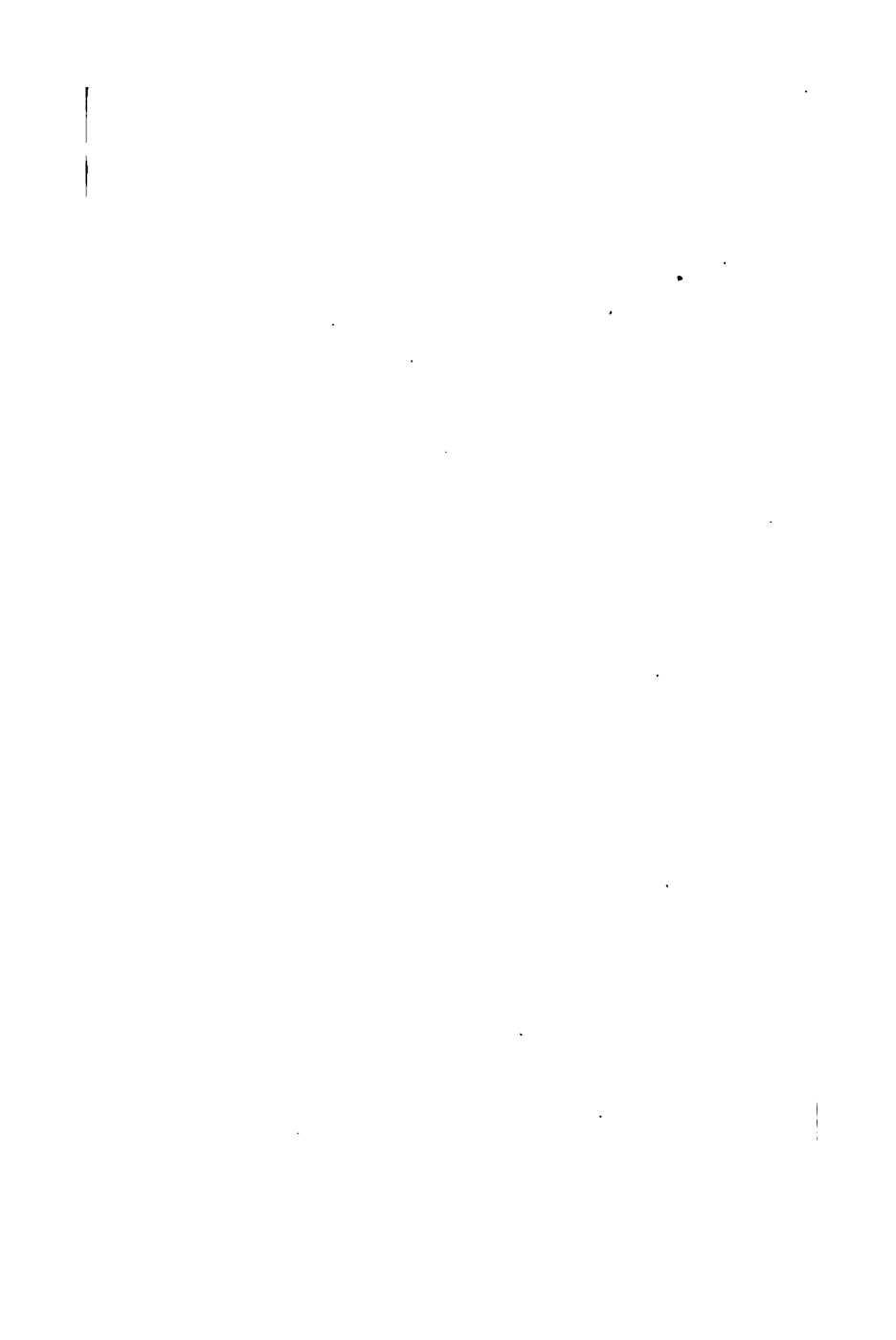
tarian army, in which he at first suffered some checks, but completely retrieved them at Marston Moor, and was appointed Generalissimo, in place of Essex,—won Naseby, reduced the West, (with Bristol), to obedience, and compelled Colchester to surrender,—opposed to the execution of Charles, and to Cromwell's policy in general, the greatest jealousy existing between the two commanders,—rather than head the invasion of Scotland, retired into private life,—privately joined Ormond's conspiracy,—at the Restoration, crossed to Holland, to congratulate Charles II., who received him well, and included him in the Act of Indemnity,—spent the rest of his leisurely life in the cultivation of letters,—wrote a volume of Poems and Miscellanies, including an interesting sketch of his life.

LEADING DATES.

Short Parliament, Ap. 13-		2nd Civil War, (so-called)	
May 5		Battle of Preston	1643
Battle of Newburn	1640	Siege of Pembroke	
Treaty of Ripon		Pride's Purge	
Long Parliament met		Royalty abolished	
Strafford tried and executed		Siege of Drogheda	1649
Star Chamber, and High Commission Court, abolished		" " Wexford	
Triennial Act		Battle of Dunbar	1650
Rebellion in Ireland		Limerick taken	
A "Remonstrance" drawn up by Commons	1641	Battle of Worcester	1651
Commencement of Civil War		Navigation Act	
Battle of Edgehill		(1st) Dutch War	
Westminster Assembly of Divines		Battles in Downs, and near Goodwin Sands	1652
Battle of Chalgrove Field		"Rump" Parliament expelled	
" " Atherton Moor		"Barebones's Parliament"	
" " Lansdowne		Instrument of Government	1653
" " Roundway Down	1643	Cromwell made Lord Protector	
" " Reading		Battles of Portland, N. Foreland, and Texel	
" " Newbury (1)		Scotland incorporated with England	1654
Solemn League and Covenantant		Treaty of Westminster	
Scots enter England		War with Spain :	1655
Battle of Nantwich		Jamaica taken	
" " Cropredy Bridge	1644	Humble Petition and Advice	1657
" " Marston Moor		Battle of Dunes	
" " Newbury (2)		Dunkirk taken	1658
" " Naseby		Rd. Cromwell Protector	
" " Philiphaugh	1645	Rd. Cromwell resigns :	1659
Laud executed		Committee of Safety	
Self-denying Ordinance		Long Parliament reassembles, and dissolves itself	
Charles refugees with the Scots	1646	(1st) Convention Parliament	1660
Charles at Holmby, Hampton, and Isle of Wight	1647	Declaration of Breda	
		Restoration	

GENEALOGICAL TABLE OF THE STUARTS,
(Shewing Queen Victoria's Descent from the Line).





A CATALOGUE
OF
EDUCATIONAL WORKS

PUBLISHED BY
GEORGE PHILIP & SON.

LONDON: 32, FLEET STREET.
LIVERPOOL: CAXTON BUILDINGS, SOUTH JOHN ST.,
AND 49 & 51, SOUTH CASTLE STREET.

1874.

PHILIPS' EDUCATIONAL CATALOGUE.

ATLASES.

Philips' Comprehensive School Atlas

Of Ancient and Modern Geography, comprising Thirty-seven Modern and Seven Ancient Maps, constructed from the latest and best authorities. The Maps carefully printed in colors. Edited by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S. Accompanied by a Consulting Index, carefully compiled. New and improved edition. Imperial 8vo., strongly half-bound, 10s. 6d.

Philips' Student's Atlas,

Comprising Thirty-six authentic Maps of the Principal Countries of the World. The Maps carefully printed in colors. Edited by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. With a copious Consulting Index. Imperial 8vo., strongly bound in cloth, 7s. 6d.

Philips' Select School Atlas,

Comprising Twenty-four authentic Maps of the Principal Countries of the World. The Maps carefully printed in colors. Edited by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. With a copious Consulting Index. Imperial 8vo., new and cheaper edition, strongly bound in cloth, 5s.

Philips' Introductory School Atlas,

Comprising Eighteen Maps of the Principal Countries of the World, clearly engraved, and carefully printed in colors. Edited by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S. Accompanied by a Consulting Index. New and cheaper edition. Imperial 8vo., bound in cloth, 3s. 6d.

Philips' Young Student's Atlas,

Comprising Thirty-six Maps of the Principal Countries of the World, printed in colors. Edited by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S. Imperial 4to., bound in cloth, 3s. 6d.

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS,

Philips' Atlas for Beginners,

Comprising Thirty-two Maps of the Principal Countries of the World, constructed from the best authorities, and engraved in the best style. New and enlarged edition, with a valuable Consulting Index, on a new plan. Edited By W. Hughes, F.R.G.S. The Maps beautifully printed in colors. Crown quarto, strongly bound in cloth, 2s. 6d.

This favourite Atlas, which is in use in most of the Principal Schools in Great Britain and the Colonies, contains all the Maps that are required by a Junior Class of Learners, and may be used conjointly with any Elementary Book on Geography. It is, however, more especially designed as a Companion to Hughes, "Elementary Class-Book of Modern Geography," every name contained in which work will be found in the Maps comprising this Atlas.

Philips' Handy Atlas of General Geography.

Containing Thirty-two Maps, with a Consulting Index. Edited by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Crown 8vo., strongly bound in cloth, 2s. 6d.

Philips' Young Scholar's Atlas.

New and enlarged edition, containing Twenty-four Maps, printed in colors. Edited by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S. Imperial 4to., bound in cloth, 2s. 6d.

Philips' First School Atlas,

New and enlarged edition, containing Twenty-four Maps, full colored. Crown quarto, bound in cloth, 1s.

Philips' Shilling Atlas,

Containing Twelve Imperial quarto Maps of Modern Geography, constructed from the most recent authorities, carefully printed in colors. Imperial 4to., in illustrated cover, 1s.

Philips' Preparatory Atlas,

Containing Sixteen Maps, full colored. Crown quarto, in neat cover, 6d.

Philips' Preparatory Outline Atlas.

Sixteen Maps. Crown quarto, printed on fine Cream-wove paper, in neat cover, 6d.

32, FLEET STREET, LONDON; AND LIVERPOOL

*Philips' Preparatory Atlas of Blank
Projections.*

Sixteen Maps. Crown quarto, printed on fine cream-wove paper,
in neat cover, 6d.

*Philips' Elementary Atlas for Young
Learners.*

Sixteen Maps, full colored. Small quarto, in neat cover, 6d.

Philips' Elementary Outline Atlas.

Sixteen Maps. Small quarto, printed on fine cream-wove paper,
in neat cover, 6d.

Philips' Initiatory Atlas for Young Learners,

Containing Twelve Maps, constructed from the best authorities.
Imperial 16mo., neat cover, 3d.; with the Maps colored, 6d.;
cloth limp, 8d.; strongly bound in cloth, 1s.

Philips' Atlas of Wales,

Comprising Twelve Maps of the separate Counties. Drawn and
engraved by John Bartholomew, F.R.G.S. Beautifully printed
in colors. Crown 4to., neat cover, 6d.

*Philips' Atlas of the British Empire
throughout the World,*

A Series of Sixteen Maps, with explanatory and statistical Notes,
by John Bartholomew, F.R.G.S. Imperial 8vo., bound in
cloth, 3s. 6d.

Philips' School Atlas of Australia,

Comprising Maps of the separate Colonies, including a General
Map of Australia, and Maps of New Zealand and Tasmania,
constructed and engraved by John Bartholomew, F.R.G.S.
The Maps carefully printed in colors. Crown quarto, bound
in cloth, 2s.

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS,

Philips' School Atlas of New Zealand,

Comprising Eleven Maps, constructed by William Hughes, F.R.G.S.
The Maps carefully printed in colors. Crown quarto, bound
in cloth, 2s.

Hughes's Training School Atlas,

A Series of Maps illustrating the Physical Geography of the Great
Divisions of the Globe. The Maps carefully printed in colors.
New and enlarged edition. By William Hughes, F.R.G.S.,
author of a "Class-Book of Physical Geography," &c., &c.
Medium folio, cloth, lettered, 15s.

The Training-School Atlas is a work altogether distinct in character from any
of those previously described. It consists of a series of Maps (sixteen in
number) designed to illustrate, on a scale of large size, and in a strictly clear
and methodical manner, the leading features in the Physical Geography—1st,
of the World at large; 2ndly, of the Great Divisions of the Globe (Europe, &c.);
3rdly, of the British Islands; and lastly, of the Holy Land. The political
Divisions of the earth at the present time are embodied upon the information
thus afforded, but in such a manner as not to interfere with its clear and
distinct exposition.

Philips' School Atlas of Physical Geography,

Comprising a Series of Maps and Diagrams illustrating the Natural
Features, Climates, Various Productions, and Chief Natural
Phenomena of the Globe. Edited by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S.
Imperial 8vo., strongly bound in cloth, 10s. 6d.

* * This Atlas is intended as a companion volume to Hughes's "Class-Book
of Physical Geography."

Philips' Physical Atlas for Beginners,

Comprising Twelve Maps, constructed by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S.,
and adapted for use in Elementary Classes. The Maps very
clearly engraved, and beautifully printed in colors. New and
cheaper edition. Crown quarto, stiff cover, 1s.; cloth,
lettered, 1s. 6d.

* * This Atlas is intended to accompany "Philips' Elementary Class-Book of
Physical Geography."

Philips' School Atlas of Classical Geography.

A Series of Eighteen Maps, constructed by William Hughes,
F.R.G.S., and engraved in the first style of the art. The
Maps printed in colors. A carefully compiled Consulting
Index accompanies the work, in which is given the modern as
well as the ancient names of places. Medium quarto, bound
in cloth, 5s.

32, FLEET STREET, LONDON ; AND LIVERPOOL

Philips' Handy Classical Atlas,

A Series of Eighteen Maps, constructed by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S.; clearly and distinctly engraved, and beautifully printed in colors, Medium 8vo., cloth lettered, 2s. 6d.

Philips' School Atlas of Scripture Geography,

A Series of Twelve Maps, constructed by William Hughes, F.R.G.S., and engraved in the best style. The Maps carefully printed in colors. New and cheaper edition. Crown 4to., in stiff cover, 1s. ; cloth, lettered, 1s. 6d. ; with a valuable Consulting Index, and strongly bound in cloth, 2s. 6d.

Philips' Smaller Scripture Atlas,

Containing Twelve Maps, constructed by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. The Maps beautifully printed in colors. Imperial 16mo., illustrated cover, 6d. ; cloth, lettered, 1s.

OUTLINE AND BLANK
ATLASES.

Philips' Atlas of Outline Maps,

For the use of Schools and for Private Tuition. Printed on fine Drawing Paper. Size—11 inches by 13 inches. Three Series, each containing Thirteen Maps, stitched in a neat cover, 3s.

Philips' Atlas of Blank Projections,

With the Lines of Latitude and Longitude, intended for the use of Students learning to construct Maps. Printed on fine Drawing Paper. Size—11 inches by 13 inches. Three Series, each containing Thirteen Maps, stitched in a neat cover, 3s.

Hughes's Atlas of Outline Maps,

With the Physical Features clearly and accurately delineated ; consisting of Eastern Hemisphere—Western Hemisphere—Europe—Asia—Africa—North America—South America—Australia—The British Islands—England and Wales—Scotland—Ireland—France—Spain—Germany—Italy—Greece—India—Palestine. Size—21 inches by 17 inches. Medium folio, bound in cloth, 7s. 6d.

7

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS,

Hughes's Atlas of Blank Projections,

Containing the same Maps as in the "Outline Atlas," and corresponding in size and scale. Size—21 inches by 17 inches. Medium folio, bound in cloth. 7s. 6d.

Philips' Imperial Outline Atlas.

Size—11 inches by 13 inches. Printed on Drawing Paper. Two Series, each containing Twelve Maps, stitched in neat cover, 1s.

Philips' Imperial Atlas of Blank Projections.

Size—11 inches by 13 inches. Printed on Drawing Paper. Two Series, each containing Twelve Maps, stitched in neat cover, 1s.

Philips' Outline Atlas for Beginners,

Being Outlines of the Maps in Philips' "Atlas for Beginners." Size—10 inches by 8 inches. Printed on fine Drawing Paper. Two Series, each containing Twelve Maps, Demy quarto, stitched in neat cover, 1s.

*Philips' Atlas of Blank Projections for
Beginners,*

Uniform in size and scale with the "Outline Atlas." Size—10 inches by 8 inches. Printed on fine Drawing Paper. Two Series, each containing Twelve Maps, Demy quarto, stitched in neat cover, 1s.

Philips' Outline Atlas,

For Students Preparing for the Oxford or Cambridge Local Examinations. In neat cover. Junior Classes, 1s. 6d.; for Senior Classes, 2s.

32, FLEET STREET, LONDON ; AND LIVERPOOL.

EDUCATIONAL MAPS.

Philips' Series of Large School-room Maps.

With the Physical Features boldly and distinctly delineated, and the Political Boundaries carefully colored. Size—5 feet 8 inches by 4 feet 6 inches. Mounted on rollers and varnished. Constructed by William Hughes, F.R.G.S.

LIST OF THE MAPS.

Price Sixteen Shillings each.

The World in Hemispheres
Europe
Asia
Africa
North America
South America
Australia and New Zealand

New South Wales
England and Wales
Scotland
Ireland
Palestine
India

Price Twenty-one Shillings each.

The World, on Mercator's
Projection
The British Islands
New Zealand, by Dr. Hector
and Thos. A. Bowden, B.A.
Oceania, on a Scale of two
degrees to an inch, shewing
the situation of New Zealand

and the Australian Colonies
relatively to the shores of
Asia and North America,
with the intervening Islands.
Australia, on a Scale of 50
miles to an inch, with lines
of recent Exploration, Elec-
tric Telegraph, &c.

The Publishers were led to undertake this Series from a conviction of the inadequacy of any similar Maps, previously issued, to represent fairly the Geographical knowledge of the present day, and their consequent failure to supply the wants of the educational community.

A really good Map is a geographical document of the highest value. Its qualities as such cannot be too forcibly impressed on the mind of Teacher and Learner alike. It must be looked on, not as a mere thing of lines and colors, but as the embodiment of vital truths, affecting the condition of mankind in all ages. And it is only a really good Map—one in which the great features of natural Geography are brought prominently into view—that can justly be so regarded. The truths that are taught by the aid of such a Map, pointed out to the comprehension of the learner as embodied within it, and to be educed thence by diligent and appreciative study, will remain in after life as landmarks in the record of mental progress.

The Publishers of the present Series are content to rest their claims to notice upon their merits alone, and they confidently invite the inspection of teachers and all persons interested in education, who desire to possess a set of *really good Maps*.

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS,

Philips' Smaller Series of School-room Maps,

Size—3 feet by 2 feet 6 inches. Mounted on rollers and varnished, each 7s. 6d.

LIST OF THE MAPS.

Eastern Hemisphere
Western Hemisphere
Europe
Asia
Africa
North America
South America

Australia
England and Wales
Scotland
Ireland
Palestine
Wanderings of the Israelites

The above are reductions of the large series, constructed by William Hughes, F.R.G.S., and are designed for use in Private Schools and Families. They are clearly and distinctly engraved, and embody an amount of information not to be had in any similar series of Maps.

*Philips' New School Maps of the Counties
of England,*

Prepared expressly for use in Public Elementary Schools, to meet the requirements of the New Code; the Physical Features are boldly delineated, and the style of Engraving is clear and distinct; the Railway System is a prominent feature, and every necessary detail has been carefully given.

LANCASHIRE AND CHESHIRE. Size—5 feet 8 inches by 4 feet 6 inches. Reduced from the Ordnance Survey. Drawn and engraved by John Bartholomew, F.R.G.S. Scale— $1\frac{1}{2}$ mile to one inch. Mounted on rollers and varnished, 16s.

LANCASHIRE. Size—37 inches by 54 inches. Reduced from the Ordnance Survey. Drawn and engraved by John Bartholomew, F.R.G.S. Scale— $1\frac{1}{2}$ mile to one inch. Mounted on rollers and varnished, 10s. 6d.

YORKSHIRE. Size—37 inches by 54 inches. Reduced from the Ordnance Survey. Drawn and engraved by John Bartholomew, F.R.G.S. Scale—3 miles to one inch. Mounted on rollers and varnished, 10s. 6d.

CHESHIRE. Size—33 inches by 44 inches. Reduced from the Ordnance Survey. Drawn and engraved by John Bartholomew, F.R.G.S. Scale— $1\frac{1}{2}$ mile to one inch. Mounted on rollers and varnished, 7s. 6d.

* * Other Counties in preparation.

32, FLEET STREET, LONDON ; AND LIVERPOOL.

Philips' Popular Sixpenny Maps.

New Series. Size—Full Sheet Imperial, 22 inches by 27 inches ; engraved in the best style, and embracing all the recent Geographical Discoveries. Beautifully printed in colors. On sheets, 6d. ; Folded, in neat cover, 6d.

List of the New Series of Sixpenny Maps :—

- | | | |
|---------------------------------------|-----------------------|--|
| 1 The World, on Mercator's Projection | 10 Spain and Portugal | 19 Australia |
| 2 Eastern Hemisphere | 11 Switzerland | 20 New Zealand |
| 3 Western ditto | 12 Italy | 21 Africa |
| 4 Europe | 13 Turkey in Europe | 22 North America |
| 5 British Isles | 14 Austria | 23 Canada, Nova Scotia, New Brunswick, &c. |
| 6 England | 15 Prussia | 24 United States |
| 7 Scotland | 16 Asia | 25 West Indies |
| 8 Ireland | 17 Palestine | 26 South America |
| 9 France, in Departments | 18 India | |

The great advance made in Geographical knowledge during the past few years, and the increasing demand for really good Maps at a low price, has induced the publishers, at a large outlay, to engrave **NEW PLATES**, from **ORIGINAL DRAWINGS**, constructed from the best authorities, so as to produce a **SERIES OF MAPS** of the principal countries of the world, which may worthily represent the Geographical knowledge of the age.

The present is the first instance of **ORIGINAL MAPS** being published at so low a price, and the publishers can only hope to be reimbursed their heavy outlay by a largely increased demand, which they confidently anticipate from the success of their former efforts in the same direction.

Philips' New Series of Educational Maps.

Imperial quarto, engraved in the best style from **Original Drawings**, and embodying an amount of information not hitherto obtainable in any similar Series of Maps. Plain Maps, on sheets, 1d. ; in neat cover, 1d. ; Colored Maps, on sheets, 2d. ; in neat cover, 2d.

List of the New Series of 1d. and 2d. Maps :—

- | | |
|--------------------------|---------------------------------|
| 1 Western Hemisphere | 14 Italy |
| 2 Eastern Hemisphere | 15 Turkey in Europe, and Greece |
| 3 Europe | 16 Asia |
| 4 British Isles | 17 India |
| 5 England and Wales | 18 Australia |
| 6 Scotland | 19 New Zealand |
| 7 Ireland | 20 Africa |
| 8 France, in Departments | 21 North America |
| 9 Prussia | 22 United States |
| 10 Russia | 23 Canada |
| 11 Germany | 24 West Indies |
| 12 Austria | 25 South America |
| 13 Spain and Portugal | 26 Palestine |

* * Outlines or Blank Projections of any of the above Maps may be had, Price 1d. each.

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS,

Philips' Cabinet Series of Educational Maps,

Edited by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Size—Imperial quarto.

LIST OF THE MAPS.

MODERN MAPS.

Price 1s. each.

- 1 & 2 Eastern and Western Hemispheres—Double Map
- 3 World, on Mercator's Projection—Double Map
- 7* England and Wales—Double Map
- 10* France—Double Map
- 89 United States—Double Map

Price 4d. each.

- 4 British Empire, at One View
- 5 Europe—General Map
- 6 The British Islands—(Political)
- 7 England and Wales
- 8 Scotland
- 9 Ireland
- 10 France, in Provinces
- 11 France, in Departments
- 12 Belgium
- 13 Holland
- 14 Prussia
- 15 The former Kingdom of Poland
- 16 Sweden and Norway
- 17 Denmark
- 18 Russia in Europe
- 19 Minor States of Germany
- 20 Austrian Empire
- 21 Switzerland

*. * Outlines or Blank Projections of any of the above Maps may be had, printed on drawing paper, price 8d. each, (except the Double Maps, which are charged 6d. each); they are well adapted for pupils preparing for the Oxford or Cambridge Middle-Class Examinations.

- 22 Spain and Portugal
- 23 Italy
- 24 Turkey in Europe, and Greece
- 25 Asia—General Map
- 26 Turkey in Asia
- 27 Russia in Asia, and Transcaucasia
- 28 Persia, with Afghanistan, &c.
- 29 India
- 30 The Empires of China and Japan
- 31 Australia and New Zealand
- 32 New South Wales, Victoria, &c.
- 33 East Indian Archipelago
- 34 New Zealand
- 35 Africa—General Map
- 36 Egypt, Arabia Petrusa, &c.
- 37 Northern and Southern Africa
- 38 North America
- 39 United States
- 40 Canada
- 41 Mexico and Yucatan
- 42 West Indies, and Central America
- 43 South America

ANCIENT MAPS.

Price 6d. each.

- 44 Palestine
- 45 World, as known to the Ancients
- 46 Roman Empire—Western half
- 47 Roman Empire—Eastern half
- 48 Greece, and the Isles of the *Ægean*

Philips' Series of Maps for Beginners,

Crown quarto, carefully printed in colors. On sheet, or folded in neat cover, each rd.

LIST OF THE MAPS.

- 1 The World, in Hemispheres
- 2 Europe
- 3 England
- 4 Scotland
- 5 Ireland
- 6 France and Switzerland
- 7 Holland and Belgium
- 8 Prussia and Germany
- 9 Sweden, Norway, and Denmark
- 10 Russia in Europe
- 11 Austria
- 12 Italy
- 13 Turkey in Europe, and Greece
- 14 Spain and Portugal
- 15 Asia
- 16 India and China
- 17 Palestine
- 18 Australia
- 19 New South Wales and Victoria
- 20 Africa
- 21 North America
- 22 United States
- 23 Canada
- 24 South America
- 25 British Isles
- 26 West Indies

*. * Outlines or Blank Projections of any of the above Maps may be had, printed on drawing paper, price 1d. each.

32, FLEET STREET, LONDON; AND LIVERPOOL

Hughes's Series of Physical Maps,

From the Training School Atlas, illustrating the Physical Geography of the Great Divisions of the Globe, with Palestine and the British Islands, on an enlarged scale. Constructed by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Size—21 inches by 17 inches. Beautifully colored. On sheets, 1s.; or mounted on rollers and varnished, 2s. 6d.

LIST OF THE MAPS.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1 Physical Map of the Eastern Hemisphere, with Isotherms of Mean Annual Temperature, Currents, &c. | 9 Australia and New Zealand. |
| 2 Physical Map of the Western Hemisphere, ditto | 10 Physical Map of the British Islands, with Section of the Land, Co-Tidal Lines, Soundings, &c. |
| 3 Physical Map of Europe, colored according to the Drainage of its different Seas, with Isotherms of Mean Summer and Winter Temperature, &c. | 11 England and Wales, with the Towns classified according to the population, and their Railway distances from London. |
| 4 Europe, according to its Political Divisions. | 12 Scotland, ditto. |
| 5 Asia. | 13 Ireland, ditto. |
| 6 Africa. | 14 Physical Map of Palestine, with the Sinai Peninsula, &c. |
| 7 North America. | 15 The World, Stereographically projected on the Plane of the Horizon of London. |
| 8 South America. | |

Philips' Series of School Physical Maps,

Constructed by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Imperial quarto, carefully printed in colors. On Sheets, 6d.

LIST OF THE MAPS.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1 The World, showing the Distribution of Land and Water. | 12 Map of the World, illustrating the Distribution of Vegetable Life. |
| 2 The World, illustrating the Chief NATURAL DIVISIONS OF THE LAND, with the OCEAN CURRENTS. | 13 Geographical Distribution of Plants throughout the Globe. |
| 3 The Geological Structure of the Earth, according to Amie Boue. | 14 Diagrams illustrating the Perpendicular Growth of Plants in the Torrid, Temperate, and Frigid Zones. |
| 4 Map illustrating the Phenomena of Volcanic Action, &c. | 15 Zoological Map, showing the Geographical Divisions and Distributions of Animals over the Earth. |
| 5 Map of the Mountain Chains and River Systems of Europe. | 16 Diagrams illustrating the Distribution of Animals in the Torrid, Temperate, and Frigid Zones. |
| 6 Map of the Mountain Chains and River Systems of Asia. | 17 Zoological Map, showing the Distribution of the Principal Birds and Reptiles over the Earth. |
| 7 The Mountain and River Systems of Africa, with Sections. | 18 Map showing the Distribution of Man over the Globe, according to Differences of Race. |
| 8 The Mountain Chains and River Systems of North America, &c. | 19 Map showing the Industrial Productions of various Countries; with the principal Trade Routes. |
| 9 The Mountain Chains and River Systems of South America, &c. | 20 Physical Map of the British Islands. |
| 10 Map of the World, illustrating the CLIMATES of Different Regions, Trade Winds, Monsoons, Isothermal Lines, Rain Map, &c. | |
| 11 Co-tidal Lines, and Curves of equal Magnetic Variation. | |

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS,

*Philips' Series of Classical, Historical, and
Scriptural Maps,*

Illustrating the Ancient Classics, Historians, and Poets. Size—
full Sheet Imperial, 29 by 23 inches; engraved in the best style,
beautifully printed on superfine paper, and carefully colored.—
Sheets, each 1s. 6d.; or mounted on rollers and varnished,
each 5s.

LIST OF THE MAPS.

No. of
Sheet.

- 1—The World, as peopled by the
descendants of Noah
- 1—Geography of the Primitive Greeks
- 1—Geography of the Hebrews, illus-
trative of the Mosaic Writings
- 1—World at the time of Herodotus
- 1—Geographical System of Ptolemy
- 2—Geographical System of Era-
tosthenes.
- 2—Geographical System of Strabo.
Syria, Assyria, Babylonia, &c.
- 3—Ancient Egypt according to
D'Anville
- 3—Ancient Palestine.
- 4—Travels of the early Patriarchs,
Canaan, and Plan of Jerusalem
- 5—Empire of Sesostris, according to
Herodotus and Diodorus Siculus
- 5—Empire of Ninus and Semiramis,
according to Ctesias
- 6—Map of the Trojan War, with Plans
- 7—The World, as known to the
Ancients, according to D'Anville
- 8—Empire of Persia at the time of
Cyrus and Darius
- 8—Empire of the Medes
- 8—Ancient Greece, illustrating the
Expedition of Xerxes
- 9—Ancient Greece, according to
D'Anville
- 10—The Travels of Anacharsis, &c.
- 11—The Kingdom of Macedon, at the
time of Philip, son of Amyntas
- 11—The Partition of the Conquests of
Alexander the Great
- 12—Expedition of Alexander the Great
and the Voyage of Nearchus
- 13—Empire of the Parthians
- 14—Ancient Sicily, with Syracuse,
as besieged by the Athenians
- 15—Asia Minor, according to D'Anville

No. of
Sheet.

- 16—Expedition of Cyrus the Younger,
and Retreat of the 10,000
- 17—Ancient Italy, according to
D'Anville, with Plan of Rome
- 18—The Expedition of Hannibal over
the Alps, with Plans
- 19—Empire of Rome—Western Part
- 20—Empire of Rome—Eastern Part
- 21—Ancient Gaul, according to
D'Anville
- 22—Ancient Spain, according to Ditto
- 23—Ancient Germany, according to
Ditto
- 24—Rome Provinces of Pannonia,
Illyricum, Dacia, and Moesia
- 24—The Roman Provinces of Vin-
pelicia, Rhætia, and Noricum
- 25—Countries visited by the Apostles,
showing the Routes of St. Paul
- 26—Countries of Western Europe,
according to D'Anville
- 27—Europe before the Invasion of the
Huns, A.D. 370
- 28—Europe after the Invasion of the
Barbarians in the Sixth Century
- 29—Turkey in Europe, Northern Part,
containing Illyricum, Dacia, &c.
- 30—Turkey in Europe, Southern
Part, containing Græcia, Mace-
donia, Thracia, &c.
- 31—Ancient Sarmatia, &c.
- 32—England under the Saxons
- 33—Map to illustrate the Crusades
- 34—Easem, or the Countries subdued
by Mahomet
- 35—Empire of Charlemagne
- 36—Europe in the Ninth Century
- 36—Europe in the Eleventh Century
- 36—Europe at the time of Charles V.
- 36—Europe in 1789, at the commence-
ment of the French Revolution

32, FLEET STREET, LONDON ; AND LIVERPOOL.

Philips' School Maps of Ancient Geography,

A Series of Eighteen Maps, constructed by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S., and engraved in the first style of the art. On Sheets, full colored, 4d. each.

LIST OF THE MAPS.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1 The World, as known to the Ancients. | 10 Egean Sea and Islands. |
| 2 The Roman Empire. | 11 Macedonia, Thracia, Moesia, &c. |
| 3 Britannia. | 12 Germania, with Vindelicia, Rætia, Noricum, and part of Pannonia. |
| 4 Gallia. | 13 Asia Minor. |
| 5 Hispania. | 14 Syria. |
| 6 Italia (North and Central). | 15 Palestine. |
| 7 Italia (South). | 16 Assyria, Media, Armenia, &c. |
| 8 Græcia (Northern Part) with Thessalia and Epirus. | 17 Egyptus. |
| 9 Peloponnesus. | 18 Mauritania, Numidia, and Africa. |

Philips' Series of Maps of the Counties of England and Wales,

Showing the Physical Features, Railways, Roads, Towns, Villages, &c. For use in Schools, and adapted to the Requirements of the New Code. Crown 4to., printed in colors, 1d. each.

ENGLISH COUNTIES.

Bedfordshire.	Hampshire.	Oxford and Bucks.
Berkshire.	Hertfordshire.	Shropshire.
Cambridge and Huntingdon.	Hertfordshire.	Somerset.
Cheshire.	Kent.	Staffordshire.
Cornwall.	Lancashire.	Suffolk.
Cumberland and Westmoreland.	Leicester and Rutland.	Surrey.
Derbyshire.	Lincolnshire.	Sussex.
Devonshire.	Middlesex.	Warwickshire.
Dorset.	Monmouthshire.	Wiltshire.
Durham.	Norfolk.	Worcestershire.
Essex.	Northamptonshire.	Yorkshire, N. and E.
Gloucester.	Northumberland.	Ridings.
	Nottinghamshire.	Yorkshire, W. Riding.

WELSH COUNTIES.

Anglesey.	Carnarvon.	Merioneth.
Brecknock.	Denbigh.	Montgomery.
Cardigan.	Flint.	Pembroke.
Carmarthen.	Glamorgan.	Radnor.

North Wales—General Map.

South Wales—General Map.

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS,

OUTLINE MAPS AND BLANK PROJECTIONS.

Hughes's Series of Outline Maps,

Correspondent in number and size to the Maps contained in the "Training-School Atlas," and exhibiting the Natural Features clearly and accurately delineated. By William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Printed on hand-made Drawing Paper. Size—21 inches by 17 inches, 6d. each.

The Outline Maps exhibit the natural features, clearly and accurately delineated, *but without the names*. They are admirably suited for exercising the learner by filling in the names, and thus fixing the natural features clearly on the mind.

Hughes's Series of Blank Projections,

Uniform in size and number with the Maps contained in the "Training-School Atlas," and to the correspondent Series of Outline Maps. Printed on hand-made Drawing Paper. Size—21 inches by 17 inches, 6d. each.

LIST OF HUGHES'S OUTLINE MAPS AND BLANK PROJECTIONS.

1 Eastern Hemisphere.	8 British Islands.	13 Palestine.
2 Western Hemisphere.	9 England and Wales.	14 France.
3 Europe.	10 Scotland.	15 Spain.
4 Asia.	11 Ireland.	16 Germany.
5 Africa.	12 Australia and New Zealand.	17 Italy.
6 North America.		18 Greece.
7 South America.		

The Blank Projections are intended for the use of more advanced pupils, who are required to draw the coast line, and the prominent Physical features of the country, as well as to insert the names.

32, FLEET STREET, LONDON; AND LIVERPOOL.

Philips' Imperial Outline Maps.

Size—13 inches by 11 inches. Printed on Drawing Paper, 1d. each.

Philips' Imperial Blank Projections.

Size—13 inches by 11 inches. Printed on fine Drawing Paper, 1d. each.

LIST OF THE IMPERIAL OUTLINES AND BLANK PROJECTIONS.

- | | | |
|-------------------------|------------------------|--------------------------|
| 1 Eastern Hemisphere. | 12 Austrian Empire. | 21 North America. |
| 2 Western Hemisphere. | 13 Spain and Portugal. | 22 United States. |
| 3 Europe. | 13*Switzerland. | 23 Canada, and the ad- |
| 4 British Islands. | 14 Italy. | joining Provinces |
| 5 England. | 15 Turkey in Europe | of British North |
| 6 Scotland. | and Greece. | America. |
| 7 Ireland. | 16 Asia. | 24 West Indies & Central |
| 8 France, in Depart- | 17 India. | America. |
| ments. | 18 Australia. | 25 South America. |
| 9 Prussia. | 19 New Zealand. | 26 Palestine. |
| 10 Russia in Europe. | 20 Africa. | |
| 11 Minor States of Ger- | | |
| many. | | |

Philips' Series of Outline Maps for Beginners,

Being Outlines of the Maps in Philips' "Atlas for Beginners."
Printed on fine Drawing Paper. Demy quarto, 1d. each.

*Philips' Series of Blank Projections for
Beginners,*

Uniform in size with the "Outline Maps for Beginners." Printed
on fine Drawing Paper. Demy quarto, 1d. each.

LIST OF PHILIPS' OUTLINE MAPS AND BLANK PROJECTIONS FOR BEGINNERS.

- | | |
|--------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1 World, in Hemispheres. | 13 Turkey in Europe, and Greece. |
| 2 Europe. | 14 Spain and Portugal. |
| 3 England. | 15 Asia. |
| 4 Scotland. | 16 India and China. |
| 5 Ireland. | 17 Palestine. |
| 6 France and Switzerland. | 18 Australia. |
| 7 Holland and Belgium. | 19 New South Wales and Victoria. |
| 8 Prussia and Germany. | 20 Africa. |
| 9 Sweden, Norway, and Denmark. | 21 North America. |
| 10 Russia in Europe. | 22 United States. |
| 11 Austria. | 23 Canada. |
| 12 Italy. | 24 South America. |

Maps, as copies to draw from, can be selected from Philips' "Educational
Maps for Beginners," of which the above are the Outlines and Projections.

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS,

Philips' Series of Outline Maps,

Corresponding with the Maps of Philips' "Comprehensive School Atlas," for the use of Schools and for Private Tuition. Printed on fine Drawing Paper. Size—13 inches by 11 inches, 3d. each.

Philips' Series of Blank Projections,

With the Lines of Latitude and Longitude, corresponding with the Maps of Philips' "Comprehensive School Atlas," and intended for the use of Students learning to construct Maps. Printed on fine Drawing Paper. Size—13 inches by 11 inches, 3d. each.

LIST OF PHILIPS' OUTLINE MAPS AND BLANK PROJECTIONS.

Modern Maps.

- 1 Eastern Hemisphere.
- 2 Western Hemisphere.
- 3 World, on Mercator's Projection (Double Map).
- 4 Europe.
- 5 British Islands.
- 6 England.
- 7 Scotland.
- 8 Ireland.
- 9 France, in Provinces.
- 10 France, in Departments.
- 11 Belgium.
- 12 Holland.
- 13 Prussia.
- 14 Sweden and Norway.
- 15 Denmark, with Iceland, &c.
- 16 Russia in Europe.
- 17 Minor States of Germany.
- 18 Austrian Empire.
- 19 Switzerland.
- 20 Spain and Portugal.
- 21 Italy.
- 22 Turkey in Europe and Greece.
- 23 Asia.

- 24 Turkey in Asia.
- 25 Russia in Asia.
- 26 India.
- 27 The Empires of China and Japan.
- 28 Australia and New Zealand.
- 29 New South Wales, Victoria, &c.
- 30 East Indian Archipelago.
- 31 Africa.
- 32 Egypt and Arabia Petrea.
- 33 North America.
- 34 United States.
- 35 Canada.
- 36 Mexico and Yucatan.
- 37 West Indies, and Central America.
- 38 South America.

Ancient Maps.

- 39 Palestine.
- 40 World, as known to the Ancients.
- 41 The Roman Empire — Western Half.
- 42 The Roman Empire — Eastern Half.
- 43 Greece, with Islands of the Egean.

Philips' Initiatory Outline Maps,

Corresponding with the Maps in the "Elementary Atlas," and which may be used as copies to draw from. Printed on Drawing Paper. Size—8 inches by 6 inches. 4d. each, or 4s. per 100.

LIST OF THE MAPS.

- | | | |
|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------|
| 1 The World. | 7 Asia. | 12 United States. |
| 2 Europe. | 8 India. | 13 South America. |
| 3 England. | 9 Africa. | 14 Australia. |
| 4 Scotland. | 10 North America. | 15 New Zealand. |
| 5 Ireland. | 11 Canada. | 16 Palestine. |
| 6 Central Europe. | | |

32, FLEET STREET, LONDON ; AND LIVERPOOL.

*Philips' Series of Outline Maps of the
Counties of England and Wales.*

To correspond with the Filled-up Maps. Printed on fine cream
wove paper. Demy quarto, 1d. each.

ENGLISH COUNTIES.

Bedfordshire.
Berkshire.
Cambridge and Hunt-
ingdon.
Cheshire.
Cornwall.
Cumberland and West-
moreland.
Derbyshire.
Devonshire.
Dorset.
Durham.
Essex.
Gloucester.

Hampshire.
Herefordshire.
Hertfordshire.
Kent.
Lancashire.
Leicester and Rutland.
Lincolnshire.
Middlesex.
Monmouthshire.
Norfolk.
Northamptonshire.
Northumberland.
Nottinghamshire.

Oxford and Bucks.
Shropshire.
Somerset.
Staffordshire.
Suffolk.
Surrey.
Sussex.
Warwickshire.
Worcestershire.
Wiltshire.
Yorkshire, N. and E.
Ridings.
Yorkshire, W. Riding.

WELSH COUNTIES.

Anglesey.
Brecknock.
Cardigan.
Carmarthen.

Carnarvon.
Denbigh.
Flint.
Glamorgan.

Merioneth.
Montgomery.
Pembroke.
Radnor.

North Wales—General Map.

South Wales—General Map.

DIAGRAMS.

*Philips' Diagrams and Synoptical Tables of the
Metric System of Weights and Measures,*

With their English equivalents. Compiled and arranged for use in
Schools, by W. Rickard, LL.D. Size—44 inches by 33 inches.
On sheet, 5s. ; mounted on rollers and varnished, 7s. 6d.

A Hand-Book of the Metric System.

Companion to the above. By W. Rickard, LL.D. Foolscap
8vo., 6d.

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS,

Philips' Diagram of Geographical Terms,

Pictorially illustrating in a bold and simple manner the various terms used in teaching Geography; useful alike for Schools and Private Families. Size—36 inches by 27 inches. On sheet, 3s. 6d.; mounted on rollers and varnished, 5s.

Philips' Music Sheets,

For use in connection with Taylor's "Manual of Vocal Music," and for general purposes of Musical Instruction. Printed in two colors. Size—33 inches by 44 inches. Separate sheets, 2s. 6d. each; the set of 15 sheets complete, 30s.

LIST OF THE SERIES.

- | | |
|--|--|
| I. NOTES ON THE TREBLE STAVE. | VII. VIII. FORMATION OF MAJOR SCALES WITH FLATS. |
| II. THE DIATONIC SCALE. | IX. THE MINOR SCALE. |
| III. RELATIVE DURATION OF NOTES. | X. XI. XII. XIII. FORMATION OF MINOR SCALES. |
| IV. TIME. | XIV. THE CHROMATIC SCALE. |
| V. VI. FORMATION OF MAJOR SCALES, WITH SHARPS. | XV. EXTENDED CHROMATIC SERIES. |

These Sheets, which are unique of their kind, being produced on a larger scale than has hitherto been attempted, and printed in two colours for the sake of clearness when used with large classes, proceed in order from the earliest rudiments, and afford material for the full explanation of any Musical passage.

They have for their chief object to render the teacher all the assistance possible during a Music Lesson in the *actual practice and analysis* of tunes, &c.

32, FLEET STREET, LONDON; AND LIVERPOOL.

CLASS BOOKS, &c.

A Class-Book of Modern Geography.

With Examination Questions, by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. The Examination Questions are drawn from the result of much experience in tuition on the part of the Author, and will be found to add considerably to the value of the work, as a class-book for popular school use. Foolscape 8vo., cloth, 3s. 6d.

. "Phillips' Comprehensive School Atlas" is designed to accompany this work.

An Elementary Class-Book of Modern Geography.

By William Hughes, F.R.G.S. This volume is abridged from the larger class-book, and is designed for the use of less advanced pupils. Foolscape 8vo., 1s. 6d.

. "Phillips' Atlas for Beginners" is designed to accompany this work.

A Class-Book of Physical Geography,

With numerous Diagrams and Examination Questions, by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. This volume has been prepared for popular school use, and exhibits, in a clear and methodical manner, the principal facts respecting the Natural Features, Productions, and Phenomena of the Earth.—New edition, entirely re-written and extended, with a Map of the World. Foolscape 8vo., cloth, 3s. 6d.

. "Phillips' School Atlas of Physical Geography" is designed to accompany this work.

An Elementary Class-Book of Physical Geography.

With Diagrams, by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Intended as a Companion Text Book to "Phillips' Physical Atlas for Beginners." Foolscape 8vo., cloth, 1s.

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS,

A Class-Book of Inorganic Chemistry,

With Tables of Chemical Analysis, and Directions for their use; compiled specially for Pupils preparing for the Oxford and Cambridge Middle-Class Examinations, and the Matriculation Examinations of the University of London. By D. Morris, B.A., Teacher of Chemistry in Liverpool College. Crown 8vo., cloth, 2s. 6d.

Bible Reading Lessons,

For Secular and other Schools. Edited by Thomas A. Bowden, B.A.Oxon. Foolscap 8vo., cloth. In Three Parts, each 1s.

*Bowden's Manual of New Zealand
Geography,*

With Eleven Maps and Examination Questions. By Thomas A. Bowden, B.A., late Government Inspector of Schools, assisted by J. Hector, M.D., F.R.S., Geologist to the New Zealand Government. Two parts in One Vol., Foolscap 8vo., cloth, 3s. 6d.

Part 1.—Containing the General Geography of the Colony, with a Sketch of its History and Productions.

Part 2.—Containing a descriptive account of each Province or Principal Division.

*Bowden's Geographical Outlines of New
Zealand,*

With Two Maps, and Examination Questions. By Thomas A. Bowden, B.A.Oxon. Foolscap 8vo., cloth, 1s.

Brewer's Manual of English Grammar,

Including the Analysis of Sentences, with copious Exercises. Foolscap 8vo., cloth, 1s.

32, FLEET STREET, LONDON ; AND LIVERPOOL

Brewer's Elementary English Grammar,

Including the Analysis of Simple Sentences. Foolscap 8vo., stiff cover, 4d.

Brewer's Outlines of English History,

For the use of Students preparing for Examination. Foolscap 8vo., cloth, 6d.

Crawley's Historical Geography,

For the use of Pupil Teachers, Students in Training Colleges, and Pupils preparing for the Civil Service Examinations. New edition, by W. J. C. Crawley. Foolscap 8vo., cloth, 2s.

DAVIES' SCRIPTURE MANUALS,

Designed for the use of Pupils preparing for the Oxford and Cambridge Local Examinations. By J. Davies, University of London.

Uniformly Printed on Foolscap 8vo., bound in cloth.

NOTES ON GENESIS - 1s.
NOTES ON EXODUS - 1s.
NOTES ON ST. MARK - 1s.
NOTES ON ST. LUKE - 1s. 6d.
NOTES ON THE ACTS OF
THE APOSTLES - 1s. 6d.
NOTES ON THE GOSPEL
OF ST. MATTHEW - 2s.
NOTES ON JOSHUA - 1s.

NOTES ON JUDGES - 1s.
NOTES ON I. SAMUEL - 1s.
NOTES ON II. SAMUEL - 1s. 6d.
NOTES ON I. KINGS - 1s. 6d.
NOTES ON II. KINGS - 1s. 6d.
NOTES ON EZRA - 1s.
MANUAL OF THE CHURCH
CATECHISM - 1s.

Uniform with above.

DAVIES' MANUAL OF THE BOOK OF COMMON PRAYER, containing the Order for Morning and Evening Prayer; the Litany; the Ante-Communion Service; the Order of Confirmation, and the Outlines of the History of the Book of Common Prayer; with a full explanation of the differences between the Old and the New Lectionary. Foolscap 8vo., cloth, 2s.

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS,

DAVIES' HISTORICAL MANUALS,

Designed for the use of Pupils preparing for the Oxford and Cambridge Local Examinations, by J. Davies, University of London.

MANUAL OF THE HISTORY AND LITERATURE OF THE TUDOR PERIOD (1485-1603) to the accession of James VI. of Scotland. 256 pp. Foolsap 8vo., cloth, 2s.

MANUAL OF THE HISTORY AND LITERATURE OF THE STUART PERIOD (to the accession of William III. and Mary II., 1689). Foolsap 8vo., cloth, 1s. 6d.

MANUAL OF THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND, FROM THE ACCESSION OF WILLIAM III. TO THE ACCESSION OF GEORGE III., and the Outlines of English Literature during the same period. Foolsap 8vo., cloth, 2s.

MANUAL OF THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND, FROM THE ACCESSION OF GEORGE III. TO THE BATTLE OF WATERLOO (1760-1815), A.D., and the Outlines of English Literature during the same period. Foolsap 8vo., cloth, 2s.

Elementary Arithmetic,

For use in Public, Elementary, and Commercial Schools. By H. T. Sortwell, Head Master of the Diocesan College, Oxford. Foolsap 8vo., cloth, 1s. 6d.

Elementary Geography of Europe,

With Colored Map. New and improved edition. By William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Imperial 32mo., neat cover, 2d.; bound in cloth, 3d.

Elementary Geography of England and Wales,

With colored Map. New and improved edition. By William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Imperial 32mo., neat cover, 2d.; bound in cloth, 3d.

Elementary Geography of Scotland and Ireland,

With Maps. New and improved edition. By W. Hughes, F.R.G.S. Imperial 32mo., neat cover, 2d.; bound in cloth, 3d.

32, FLEET STREET, LONDON ; AND LIVERPOOL.

Gardner and Sharpe's Series of Home Lessons.

THE COMPREHENSIVE HOME LESSON BOOK, Part I. (for Standard I., New Code.)—Contains Lessons in Scripture and Hymns ; Arithmetic ; Spelling ; and Short Lessons in Prose and Verse for transcription, 4d.

————— **Part II. (for Standard II., New Code.)**—Contains Lessons in Scripture and Hymns ; Arithmetic and Spelling, 4d.

————— **Part III. (for Standard III., New Code.)**—Contains Lessons in Scripture and Hymns ; Arithmetic ; Spelling and Composition, 4d.

————— **Part IV. (for Standard IV., New Code.)**—Contains Lessons in Scripture and Hymns ; Arithmetic ; Spelling ; Grammar ; Geography and Poetry, 7d.

————— **Part V. (for Standard V., New Code.)**—Contains Lessons in Scripture and Hymns ; Arithmetic ; Spelling ; Grammar ; Geography ; History ; Etymology ; Composition ; and Poetry, 9d.

————— **Part VI. (for Standard VI., New Code.)**—Contains Lessons in Scripture and Hymns ; Arithmetic ; Spelling ; Grammar ; Geography ; History ; Etymology ; Composition ; and Poetry, 9d.

KEYS TO ARITHMETICAL EXAMPLES IN EACH PART, 3d. Each.

GEOGRAPHY OF THE BRITISH ISLES, arranged in Lessons, with Colored Map, specially adapted for the work, 4d.

GEOGRAPHY OF EUROPE, arranged in Lessons, with Colored Map, specially adapted for the work, 4d.

HISTORY OF ENGLAND, arranged in Lessons, 4d. ; cloth, 6d.

ENGLISH GRAMMAR, arranged in Lessons, 4d. ; cloth, 6d.

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS,

Griffiths' Teacher's Hand-Book,

For the Preparation of Lessons, for the use of Teachers and Students in Training. By R. J. Griffiths, LL.D., Author of a Guide to Government Certificate Examinations, &c. Foolscap 8vo., cloth, 1s.

Guide to the Government Certificate Examinations,

With Questions and Specimen Answers. By R. J. Griffiths, LL.D. Foolscap 8vo., cloth, 1s.

Haughton's Geography and History of England and Wales,

With descriptive Geography of each County. Foolscap 8vo., stiff covers, 6d.

Haughton's Geography and History of England and Wales.

Abridged edition for Junior Pupils. Foolscap 8vo., 3d.

Haughton's Sovereigns of England,

With Dates, Descent, Place of Birth, Death, &c. Also the Principal Events of English History. Foolscap 8vo., 1d.

Haughton's Manual of Arithmetical Exercises,

For Desk and Home Work, arranged so as to prevent copying, and adapted to the requirements of the Code of 1872.

Part 1.—Simple Rules. Foolscap 8vo., sewed, 2d.

Answers to Ditto. 4to, cloth, 6d.

Part 2.—Compound Rules. Foolscap 8vo., sewed, 2d.

Answers to Ditto. 4to, cloth, 6d.

Jones' Spelling Book for Beginners,

With Memory Exercises. Foolscap 8vo., cloth, 6d.

32, FLEET STREET, LONDON; AND LIVERPOOL.

Jones' Essentials of Spelling,

With Rules for Spelling, and Exercises thereon. New Edition.
Foolscap 8vo., cloth, 1s.

Kiddle's Easy Course of Perspective,

Preparatory to Free-Hand Drawing and Sketching from Nature,
for the use of Schools. By J. I. Kiddle, Drawing Master and
Teacher of Surveying, King William's College, Isle of Man.
Oblong folio, stiff cover, 2s.

Lawson's Outlines of Geography,

For Schools and Colleges. By W. Lawson, St. Mark's College,
Chelsea, author of "Geography of the British Empire."
Foolscap 8vo., cloth, 3s.

Lawson's Geography of River Systems.

By W. Lawson, St. Mark's College, Chelsea. Foolscap 8vo.,
cloth, 1s.

Lawson's Geography of Coast Lines.

By W. Lawson, St. Mark's College, Chelsea. Foolscap 8vo.,
cloth, 1s.

Lawson's Young Scholar's Geography.

A simple Book for Young Learners. Foolscap 8vo., stiff cover, 6d.;
bound in cloth, 9d.

.. This work is intended as a Companion to "Phillips' Initiatory Atlas."

Piper's Mental Arithmetic,

For Pupil Teachers and Students in Training Colleges, containing
Rules and Exercises founded on Examination Papers. By
Thomas W. Piper, Normal Master and Lecturer on Mental
Arithmetic in the National Society's Training College, Bat-
tersea. Foolscap 8vo., cloth, 1s. 6d.

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS,

*Philips' Series of Geographies of the Counties
of England,*

For use in Schools, and adapted to the Requirements of the New Code. Uniformly printed in bold and readable type.

Foolscap 8vo., 32 pp., sewed, with Map, 2d.

Bound in cloth, with colored Map, 4d.

Double Vols, 64 pp., sewed, with Map, 4d.

Bound in cloth, with colored Map, 6d.

LIST OF THE SERIES.

- | | |
|--|---|
| BEDFORDSHIRE , with Sketch Maps,
by Rev. J. P. Faunthorpe, M.A.,
F.R.G.S. | LINCOLNSHIRE , with Sketch Maps,
by Rev. J. P. Faunthorpe, M.A.,
F.R.G.S. |
| BERKSHIRE , with Sketch Maps,
by Rev. J. P. Faunthorpe, M.A.,
F.R.G.S. | MIDDLESEX , by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S. |
| CAMBRIDGE and HUNTINGDON ,
with Sketch Maps, by Rev. J. P.
Faunthorpe, M.A., F.R.G.S. | MONMOUTHSHIRE , by Rev. D.
Morris, B.A. |
| CESHIRE , by J. H. Sortwell. | NORFOLK , by Rev. D. Morris, B.A. |
| CORNWALL , with Sketch Maps,
by Rev. J. P. Faunthorpe, M.A.,
F.R.G.S. | NORTHAMPTONSHIRE , by Rev. D.
Morris, B.A. |
| CUMBERLAND and WESTMORE-
LAND , by J. Walton. | NORTHUMBERLAND , by J. Walton. |
| DERBYSHIRE , with Sketch Maps,
by Rev. J. P. Faunthorpe, M.A.,
F.R.G.S. | NOTTINGHAMSHIRE , with Sketch
Maps, by Rev. J. P. Faunthorpe,
M.A., F.R.G.S. |
| DEVONSHIRE , with Sketch Maps,
by Rev. J. P. Faunthorpe, M.A.,
F.R.G.S. | OXFORD and BUCKS. , with Sketch
Maps, by Rev. J. P. Faunthorpe,
M.A., F.R.G.S. |
| DORSET , with Sketch Maps, by Rev.
J. P. Faunthorpe, M.A., F.R.G.S. | SHROPSHIRE , by Rev. D. Morris. |
| DURHAM , by W. Lawson, F.R.G.S. | SOMERSET , by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S. |
| ESSEX , by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S. | STAFFORDSHIRE , by Rev. D. Morris. |
| GLOUCESTER , by J. Walton. | SUFFOLK , by Rev. D. Morris, B.A. |
| HAMPSHIRE , with Sketch Maps,
by Rev. J. P. Faunthorpe, M.A.,
F.R.G.S. | SURREY , by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S. |
| HEREFORDSHIRE , by Rev. D.
Morris, B.A. | SUSSEX , with Sketch Maps, by Rev.
J. P. Faunthorpe, M.A., F.R.G.S. |
| HERTFORDSHIRE , with Sketch
Maps, by Rev. J. P. Faunthorpe,
M.A., F.R.G.S. | WARWICKSHIRE , by Rev. D.
Morris, B.A. |
| KENT , by W. Hughes, F.R.G.S. | WILTSHIRE , with Sketch Maps,
by Rev. J. P. Faunthorpe, M.A.,
F.R.G.S. |
| LANCASHIRE , by W. Hughes,
F.R.G.S. | WORCESTERSHIRE , by Rev. D.
Morris, B.A. |
| LEICESTER and RUTLAND , by J.
Walton. | YORKSHIRE, NORTH and EAST R-
ings, with Sketch Maps, by Rev. J.
P. Faunthorpe, M.A., F.R.G.S. |
| | YORKSHIRE, West R-ings, with
Sketch Maps, by Rev. J. P. Faun-
thorpe, double vol., 4d. and 6d. |
| | NORTH WALES , by W. Garratt
Jones, double vol., 4d. and 6d. |

32, FLEET STREET, LONDON ; AND LIVERPOOL.

SCHOOL REGISTERS, &c.

Philips' Public Elementary School Registers, arranged to meet the Requirements of the New Code.

An entirely New Series, on an improved plan, arranged by an Inspector of Schools.

1. *The Class Register of Attendance and Payments,*

For 200 Names. Foolscap folio, quarter-bound, stiff cover, 9d.

2. *The Admission Register,*

For 600 Names, with Index. Foolscap folio, quarter-bound, stiff cover, 1s. 6d.

3. *The Admission Register,*

For 1,200 Names, with Index. Foolscap folio, strongly half-bound, cloth sides, 3s. 6d.

4. *The Summary Register,*

Arranged to receive the results of the Class Register for *two* years. Foolscap folio, quarter-bound, stiff cover, 1s. 6d.

5. *The Summary Register,*

Arranged to receive the results of the Class Register for *five* years. Foolscap folio, strongly half-bound, cloth sides, 3s. 6d.

6. *The Evening School Register of Attendance and Payments,*

Arranged to meet the requirements of the New Code. Foolscap folio, stiff cover, price 6d.

Standard Register, No. 1.

Record of Admission, compiled in accordance with the requirements of the Revised Code, by one of Her Majesty's Inspectors of Schools. Foolscap folio, half-bound, 3s. 6d.

Standard Register, No. 2.

Roll for Daily Use, Name of School, Number of Roll, &c. ; compiled by the same. Foolscap folio, stiff cover, 8d.

Standard Register, No. 3.

Summary for Ten Years, compiled by the same. Foolscap folio, half-bound, cloth sides, 3s. 6d.

Newton's Admission Register, No. 1.

Contains space for 600 Names, and Columns for all the requirements of the Committee of Council on Education. Foolscap folio, stiff cover, 1s. 6d.

Newton's Admission Register, No. 2.

For 1,200 Names. Foolscap folio, half-bound, cloth sides, 3s. 6d.

Newton's Yearly Class Register,

Ruled for the Year, and requires the Name, Residence, Age, &c., to be entered only once during the whole year. It contains space for 50 Names, Columns for recording the results of Four Quarterly Examinations, and a page for entering the Course of Lessons for each Quarter. Foolscap folio, stiff cover, 7d.

Newton's Quarterly Class Register,

Ruled for each Quarter for 50 Names. It contains a Copy of the Examination Schedule, with Columns for recording the results of four Quarterly Examinations, and a page for entering the Course of Lessons for each Quarter. Foolscap folio, stiff cover, 8d.

Newton's General Register or Summary, No. 1.

Arranged to receive all the Results of the Class Register for Three Years. A printed copy of Form IX. is given for each year. Foolscap folio, stiff cover, 1s. 6d.

32, FLEET STREET, LONDON ; AND LIVERPOOL

Newton's General Register, No. 2.

To serve for Six Years. Foolscap folio, strongly half-bound, cloth sides, 3s. 6d.

Newton's Evening School Register,

Contains space for 60 Scholars. It is ruled for 24 Weeks, and contains Columns for entering the Results of Four Monthly Examinations. Foolscap folio, stiff cover, 6d.

*Daily Record of Application to Study and
General Deportment.*

For use in Ladies' Schools. Foolscap 8vo., neat cover, 6d.

*Daily Record of Application to Study and
General Deportment.*

For use in Boys' Schools. Foolscap 8vo., neat cover, 6d.

The Teacher's Class Register.

Foolscap 8vo., cloth, 2d.

Philips' Sunday School Library Register.

On a new and improved plan. Folio, strongly half-bound, cloth sides, 12s. 6d.

Philips' School Treasurer's Cash Book.

Arranged according to the Forms and Directions of the Committee of Council on Education. It contains Balance Sheets for Twenty Years. Oblong folio, strongly half-bound, cloth sides, 5s.

Philips' School Log Book.

Ruled, Indexed, and Paged, with Directions for making Entries. Post 4to., strongly half-bound, cloth sides, 6s., or with Lock, 7s. 6d.

Philips' School Portfolio,

For holding Official Correspondence. With Lock, 4s.

GEORGE PHILIP & SON, PUBLISHERS,

Taylor's Manual of Vocal Music,

For use in Public Elementary Schools, and adapted to the requirements of the New Code. Forming a Complete Guide to Singing at Sight. By John Taylor, author of "A few words on the Anglican Chant," &c. Crown 8vo., bound in cloth, 1s. 6d.

Or it may be had in Parts—

Part 1.—THEORETICAL, principally for Home Work. Crown 8vo., stiff cover, price 6d.

Part 2.—PRACTICAL, for use in School. Crown 8vo., stiff cover, price 9d.

THIS Work, prepared expressly to meet the requirements of the New Code by a Certificated Teacher of great practical experience, is based upon an entirely new plan, and offers to Teachers the following among other special advantages:—

I.—An arrangement of the cardinal facts and principles of Music essential to the acquirement of the Art of Singing at Sight, *arranged for memory work as Home Lessons.*

II.—A comprehensive test of the pupil's knowledge of the same by means of copious Exercises in Writing.

III.—Nearly 200 carefully graduated Musical Exercises, consisting with hardly an exception of *actual Musical Compositions*, (*Pieces, Tunes, &c.*)—the Sol-Fa Syllables, Time Marks, and other noteworthy points being indicated in every instance where needed. *Provision is thus afforded for satisfying the requirements of the Minute of May, 1872, without the necessity of obtaining additional Music.*

IV.—Exclusive employment is made of the ordinary Musical Notation.

V.—The Work may be used with good effect by Teachers possessing but a slight knowledge of Music.

Tablet Lessons.

For use in the School-room or Nursery. The Set, comprising 19 royal broadside sheets, in cover, with millboard back and wooden ledge to hang up, 3s. 6d.; the separate sheets, each 2d

"What shall I Teach Next?"

A Series of Subjects for Lessons in Religious Knowledge, Reading, Writing, Arithmetic, Grammar, Geography, and Dictation, for Four Years, progressively arranged in Daily Portions. By W. C. Sparrow. Crown 8vo., cloth, 1s. 6d.

32, FLEET STREET, LONDON; AND LIVERPOOL.

PHILIPS' DRAWING COPY BOOKS,

Designed and Drawn by a Practical Teacher.

SIMPLE STUDIES IN STRAIGHT LINE AND PERSPECTIVE, in Seven Books. Oblong 4to., printed on Toned Drawing Paper, each 3d. The Set, bound in cloth elegant, 2s. 6d.

LIST OF THE SERIES.

- | | |
|--|---|
| <p>A. Introductory Book.
1. Straight Line Objects drawn Geometrically.
2. Straight and Curve Line Objects drawn Geometrically.</p> | <p>3. Straight Line Objects in Perspective
4. Straight and Curve Line Objects in Perspective.
5. Floral Forms drawn Geometrically.
6. Studies of Flowers, in Outline.</p> |
|--|---|

* * These Drawing Copy Books have been expressly prepared for the use of pupils in Public Schools desiring to pass at the Government Examinations. Nos. 3 and 4 will be found an excellent preparation for Drawing from Models.

EASY LANDSCAPES. First Series, in Six Books. Oblong 4to., printed on Toned Drawing Paper, each 3d. The Set, bound in cloth elegant, 2s. 6d.

EASY LANDSCAPES. Second Series, in Six Books. Oblong 4to., printed on Toned Drawing Paper, each 3d. The Set, bound in cloth elegant, 2s. 6d.

SCRIPTURE PRINTS.

For Schools and Families. The Set comprises 36 Prints, beautifully printed in Oil Colors, with Texts in Ornamental Borders. Size—17 inches by 13 inches. In neat cover, 15s.; the separate Prints, each 6d. The Set mounted on 18 millboards and Varnished, £1 5s.

LIST OF PLATES IN THE SET—

- | | |
|---|---|
| <p>1. The Warning Voice (Christ Knocking at the Door).
2. The Good Shepherd.
3. St. John Baptist.
4. The Lord's Prayer (Infant Samuel).
5. The Parables of Nature.—The Lilies of the Field.
6. The Great Physician (Healing the Sick).
7. Christ with Little Children.
8. The Ascension.
9. The Light of the World.
10. The God of the Widow (The Widow of Nain).
11. The Hour of Need (Hagar and Ishmael).
12. The Ministry of Angels (Jacob's Dream).
13. A Christmas Carol (The Announcement to the Shepherds).
14. The Guardian Angel.
15. Infant Piety (Samuel and Eli).</p> | <p>16. The Presentation in the Temple.
17. The Agony in the Garden.
18. The Crucifixion.
19. The Beatitudes.
20. The Holy Family.
21. The Triumphal Entry.
22. The Questioning with the Doctors.
23. The Last Supper.
24. The Man of Sorrows.
25. The Flight into Egypt.
26. The Good Samaritan.
27. Christ the Living Water.
28. The Visit of the Wise Men.
29. The Infant Saviour.
30. The Prophet on the Mount.
31. The Chief Shepherd.
32. Bearing the Cross.
33. The Greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven.
34. Ananias and Sapphira.
35. Holy Baptism.
36. Raising Lazarus.</p> |
|---|---|

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS,

**PHILIPS' SERIES OF
HEAD LINE COPY BOOKS.**

**PHILIPS' HOME AND COLONIAL COPY BOOKS, Written
and Arranged by Alexander Stewart. In Fifteen Books,
Foolscap 4to., each 2d.**

LIST OF THE SERIES.

- | | |
|-------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1 Initiatory Exercises. | 9 Round and Small Hands. |
| 2 Letters and Combinations. | 10 Small Hand. |
| 3 Short Words. | 11 Text, Round, and Small Hands. |
| 4 Capitals. | 12 Introduction to Ladies' Hand. |
| 5 Text Hand. | 13 Ladies' Hand. |
| 6 Text and Round. | 14 Commercial Sentences. |
| 7 Round Hand. | 15 Figures. |
| 8 Introduction to Small Hand. | |

This Series is produced by an entirely New Process, the lines being printed direct from COPPER PLATES BY PATENTED MACHINERY, thus securing an accuracy and finish much superior to that obtainable by any process hitherto employed.

In the proper Gradation and Arrangement of the Lines, as well as in the Style of Writing and Engraving, much thought and care have been bestowed, and it is believed they will recommend themselves to all Practical Teachers as an improvement upon any existing series.

**PHILIPS' PROGRESSIVE SERIES OF SCHOOL COPY
BOOKS, Written and Arranged by Alexander Stewart.**

FOOLSCAP 4to., Printed on Fine Cream Paper, each 2d.

FINE EDITION, on superfine paper, each 3d.

LIST OF THE SERIES.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1 Initiatory Exercises. | 9 Small Hand. |
| 2 Alphabet in Progressive Order. | 10 Large, Round, and Small Hands. |
| 3 Short Words. | 10½ Large, Text, Round, and Small Hands. |
| 4 Large Hand. | 11 Ladies' Small Hand. |
| 4½ Text Hand. | 12 Commercial Small Hand. |
| 5 Large and Round Hands. | 13 Figures. |
| 6 Round Hand. | 14 Introductory Book for Girls. |
| 7 Introduction to Small Hand. | 15 Ladies' Angular Hand — First Book. |
| 7½ Introductory Book.—Large, Round, and Small Hands. | |
| 8 Round and Small Hands. | |

GEORGE PHILIP AND SON, PUBLISHERS.

PHILIPS' PROGRESSIVE SERIES OF COPY BOOKS—Continued.

POST 4to., Printed on Fine Cream Wove Paper, each 4d.

DEMY 4to., extra Superfine Series, each 6d.

LARGE POST 4to. Series, each 6d.

LIST OF THE SERIES.

- | | |
|----------------------------------|---|
| 1 Initiatory Exercises. | 9 Small Hand. |
| 2 Alphabet in Progressive Order. | 10 Large, Round, and Small Hands. |
| 3 Short Words. | 11 Ladies' Small Hand. |
| 4 Large Hand. | 12 Set of Commercial Sentences. |
| 5 Large and Round Hands. | 13 Text Hand. |
| 6 Round Hand. | 14 Large, Text, Round, and Small Hands. |
| 7 Introduction to Small Hand. | |
| 8 Round and Small Hands. | |

PHILIPS' VICTORIA COPY BOOKS. With Engraved Headlines, Written and Arranged by Alexander Stewart. An entirely New Series, in Twelve Books, oblong 4to., printed on superfine extra thick cream wove paper, each 3d.

LIST OF THE SERIES.

- | | |
|----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1 Initiatory Exercises. | 7 Introduction to Small Hand. |
| 2 Alphabet in Progressive Order. | 8 Round and Small Hands. |
| 3 Short Words. | 9 Small Hand. |
| 4 Text Hand. | 10 Text, Round and Small Hands. |
| 5 Text and Round Hands. | 11 Introduction to Ladies' Hand. |
| 6 Round Hand. | 12 Ladies' Small Hand. |

* * These Copy Books are well adapted for use in Middle Class Schools and Ladies' Seminaries, and will be found to combine excellence of quality with moderation in price.

PHILIPS' SERIES OF HISTORICAL COPY BOOKS. In Twelve Books, Demy 4to., Extra Thick Paper, each 6d.

LIST OF THE SERIES.

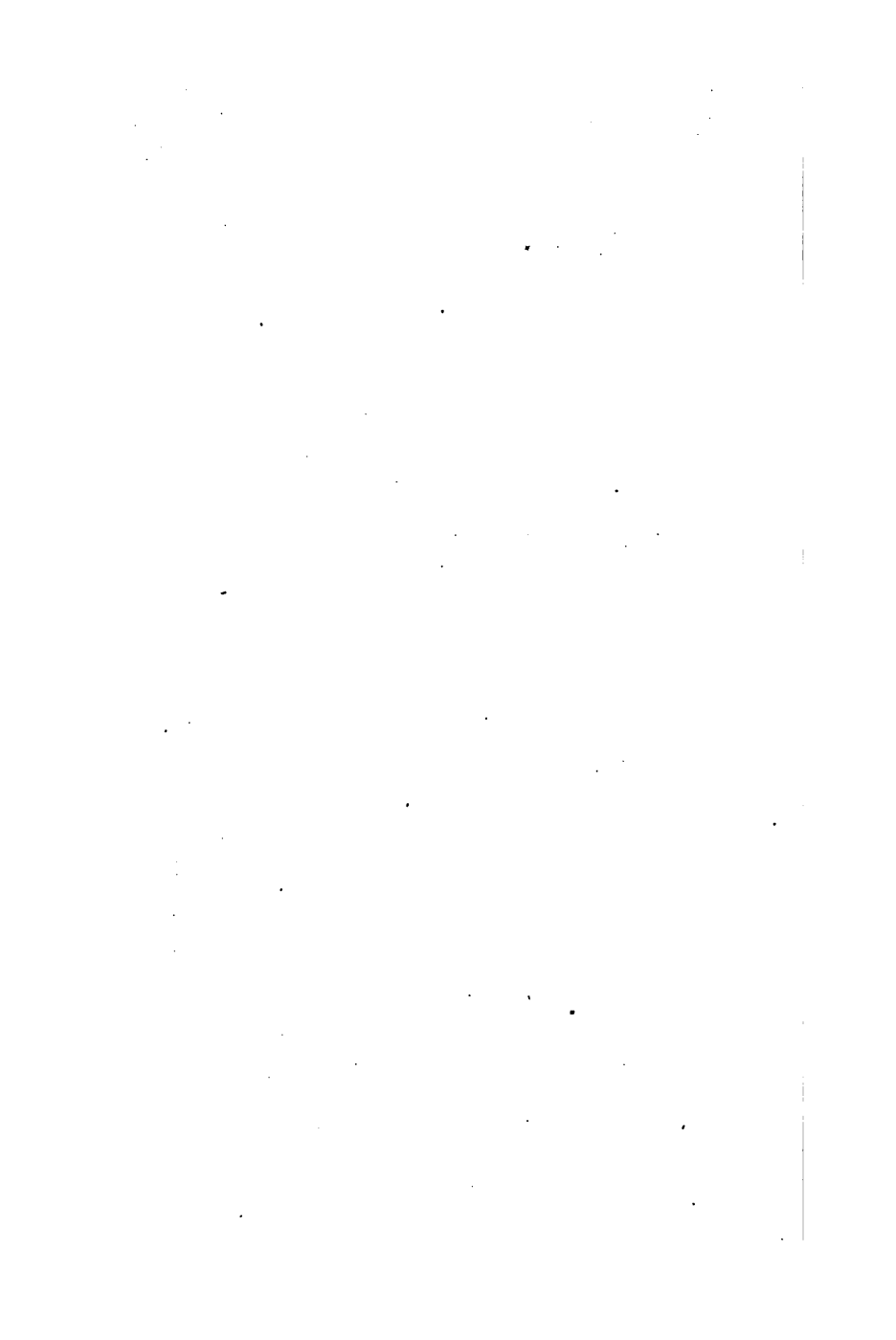
- | | |
|--|---|
| 1 William the Conqueror, to Henry the First. | 7 Henry the Seventh, to Edward the Sixth. |
| 2 Stephen, to Richard the First. | 8 Mary, to James the First. |
| 3 John, to Edward the First. | 9 Charles the First, to Charles the Second. |
| 4 Edward the Second, to Richard the Second. | 10 James the Second, to Anne. |
| 5 Henry the Fourth, to Henry the Sixth. | 11 George the First, to George the Third. |
| 6 Edward the Fourth, to Richard the Third. | 12 George the Fourth, to Victoria. |

The lines selected narrate some of the most remarkable events of English History, Chronologically arranged, commencing with the reign of William the Conqueror, and concluding with that of Her Majesty Queen Victoria, thus forming a pleasing outline of the History of England, calculated to interest the learner, and instil into the mind a taste for history.

PHILIPS' SERIES OF COPY SLIPS, arranged and written by Alexander Stewart, printed on fine cream-wove paper. 4d.

LIST OF THE SERIES.

- | | |
|-------------------------------|-----------------------|
| 1 Short Words. | 5 Small Hand. |
| 2 Large Hand. | 6 Ladies' Small Hand. |
| 3 Round Hand. | 7 Text Hand. |
| 4 Introduction to Small Hand. | |





George Philip and Son, Publishers, London and Liverpool.

GEOGRAPHICAL CLASS BOOKS.

A CLASS-BOOK OF MODERN GEOGRAPHY, with Examination Questions, by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Foolsap 8vo., cloth	s. d. 3 6
AN ELEMENTARY CLASS-BOOK OF MODERN GEOGRAPHY, by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Foolsap 8vo., cloth	1 6
A CLASS BOOK OF PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY, with numerous Diagrams and Examination Questions, by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Foolsap 8vo., cloth	3 6
AN ELEMENTARY CLASS BOOK OF PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY, with Diagrams, by William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Intended as a Companion Text Book to "Philips' Physical Atlas for Beginners." Foolsap 8vo., cloth, colored	i 0
ELEMENTARY GEOGRAPHY OF EUROPE, with a Map. By William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Imperial 32mo, neat cover, 2d., or in cloth	0 3
ELEMENTARY GEOGRAPHY OF ENGLAND AND WALES, with a Map. By William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Imperial 32mo, neat cover, 2d., or in cloth	0 3
ELEMENTARY GEOGRAPHY OF SCOTLAND AND IRELAND, with Maps. By William Hughes, F.R.G.S. Imperial 32mo., neat cover, 2d., or in cloth	0 3
OUTLINES OF GEOGRAPHY, FOR SCHOOLS AND COLLEGES, by William Lawson, St. Mark's College, Chelsea. Foolsap 8vo., cloth	3 0
THE GEOGRAPHY OF RIVER SYSTEMS, by William Lawson, St. Mark's College, Chelsea. Foolsap 8vo. cloth	1 0
THE GEOGRAPHY OF COAST LINES, by William Lawson, St. Mark's College, Chelsea. Foolsap 8vo., cloth	1 0
THE YOUNG SCHOLAR'S GEOGRAPHY, by William Lawson. Foolsap 8vo, stiff cover, 6d., cloth	0 9
A MANUAL OF HISTORICAL GEOGRAPHY, for the use of Civil Service Students, Training Colleges, &c. By W. J. C. Crawley, B.A. Foolsap 8vo., cloth	2 0

George Philip and Son, Publishers, London and Liverpool.

George Philip and Son, Publishers, London and Liverpool.

EDUCATIONAL MAPS.

PHILIPS' SERIES OF LARGE SCHOOL-ROOM MAPS.

With the Physical Features boldly and distinctly delineated, and the Political Boundaries carefully colored. Size—5 feet 8 inches by 4 feet 6 inches. Mounted on rollers and varnished. Constructed by William Hughes, F.R.G.S.

LIST OF THE MAPS.

Price 16s. each.

THE WORLD, IN HEMI-
SPHERES

EUROPE

ASIA

AFRICA

NORTH AMERICA

SOUTH AMERICA

AUSTRALIA AND NEW
ZEALAND

NEW SOUTH WALES

ENGLAND AND WALES

SCOTLAND

IRELAND

PALESTINE

INDIA

Price 21s. each.

THE WORLD, ON MER-
CATOR'S PROJECTION

BRITISH ISLANDS

NEW ZEALAND

OCEANIA

PHILIPS' SMALLER SERIES OF SCHOOL-ROOM MAPS.

Size—3 feet by 2 feet 6 inches.

Mounted on rollers and varnished, each 7s. 6d.

LIST OF THE MAPS.

EASTERN HEMISPHERE

WESTERN HEMISPHERE

EUROPE

ASIA

AFRICA

NORTH AMERICA

SOUTH AMERICA

AUSTRALIA

ENGLAND AND WALES

SCOTLAND

IRELAND

PALESTINE

WANDERINGS OF THE
ISRAELITES

The above are reductions of the large series, constructed by William Hughes, F.R.G.S., and are designed for use in Private Schools and Families. They are clearly and distinctly engraved, and embody an amount of information not to be had in any similar series of Maps.

George Philip and Son,

Liverpool.

